

The Stained Omega by Elle T Jefferson

Read Chapter 151-200

Chapter 151

Take a moment.

(Anna)

“So if we block this road they will have nowhere to go.” Patrick points at an aerial view map Fraction had printed off, “if we block this road they will have no choice but to stop.”

“That’s good, I want to avoid violence if we can, we already know they have children and at least one pup in there.” Fraction says leaning over the table to see the map, he looks up at me, Eliza, Cas and Mac as if to ask if we have any questions.

“So we just let them go once they hand over your people?” Mac asks, sounding confused.

“Not at all, we make them hand over every shifter they have. From what Elder Thomas said.” Fractions eyes flit to mine but I look away, I still can’t think about Elder Thomas I have too much going on. “They have at least one Pack member from South Claw Pack, Darryl sees that person as his Pack member considering he absorbed most of the Pack.” Mac nods his head in understanding. “Sam called last night and he said when the shifters were moved across the compound he saw at least a dozen or so people that he had seen at the Moon Ceremony.” Mac and Cas get angry looks on their faces, I get their anger, it means The Shalamayne have been taking American shifters for longer than we have known.

“Eva said they only just got here, how did they take so many?” Mac asks while breathing deeply, as a head warrior he will take missing shifters as hard as Patrick has.

“Maybe she didn’t know, that compound looks like it’s been there at

0001

|||

O

Take a moment.

while. Maybe it's just the group that snagged her that recently came here?" I don't understand why Cas is always so quick to defend Eva, he hasn't shown a single ounce of anger towards her.

"Or maybe she's a kidnapping liar?" Eliza says exactly what I'm thinking and I catch her eye across the table nodding my head a little to tell her I agree.

"Or maybe she's a pup who has been abused and dragged up by shifter haters?" Cas says while going red in the face.

"Enough! Right now I don't care what Eva is or isn't, we move tonight. We rescue all of the shifters who will come with us, we won't force anyone to leave who doesn't want to." Fraction stands up from the table and crosses his arms looking at each person, "Cas and Mac you two are with me and Mac, Rick you and your warriors know your job." The three guys nod at Fraction all looking ready to go, "Little wolf. Eliza, you two are to get Aurora to safety and then run back to the safe point."

"I want to be there, if there is a fight," Rick growls at Eliza and she quickly steps backwards.

"You won't be fighting, kitten." No one at the table disagrees, Eliza is lucky to be coming at all she only is because Fraction didn't want me alone.

"Darryl will be here within the hour and then we roll, get your guys together and do what you need to be ready." Everyone starts to trickle out of the office and soon me and Fraction are alone, I copy his move from the other day and walk over to the door sliding the lock into place.

Fraction looks up at me as I close the door, he stops rolling up the map and raises an eyebrow at me. I don't say anything as I walk into the middle of the room, not breaking eye contact with him. I see his pupils

dilate as I start to undo my dress, I let the material slide down my b*dy to reveal my pink and black lace bra and french cut panties. Standing there in nothing but my underwear, I let him look his fill as I run my finger across the swell of my breasts following the line of the lace.

"Little wolf." Fraction's voice comes out as a soft growl as he takes a step forward, I'm not ready for the teasing to end so I take a step back. His nostrils flare as he sniffs taking in the scent of my arousal, nodding towards the chair I silently tell Fraction to sit down. It takes him a moment but eventually he takes a set spreading his legs wide to give his growing c ock room to jut against his jeans.

"You've worked yourself ragged," I say in a low voice as I walk over to where he's sitting. Walking slowly so he can glide his eyes over b*dy I walk around him so I'm behind the chair, draping myself over his shoulders sliding my hands down his chest.

Leaving a k*ss on his n*eck, I pull back up bringing the hem of his black t-shirt with me. He lifts his arms as I pull the shirt clear of his head, I drop it behind me as I walk around to face him. "You haven't stopped for a second," I drop to my knees, placing my hands on his thighs. I feel him tense up as I slide my hands along his jeans. "It's time to take a minute for you," I pop the button on his jeans and slide his zip down. "It's time to stop blaming yourself for something you didn't do wrong." Fraction's hand lands on mine and I look up to see his pupils are fully blown and his eyes keep flicking between blazing green and bright yellow.

"You don't have to do this." He tells me in a low gruff voice, I can see the rise of his tattooed chest as he tries to calm himself.

"And you didn't have to punish yourself these last few weeks but you did." I pull my hand from his and reach into his jeans, grasping his co ck I pull him from his jeans. "Let me make you feel good, make us both feel good." Fraction nostrils flare as he drops his head back to look at the ceiling, I take this as my que to carry on and I immediately lower my mouth sucking the head of him in.

Fraction gasps as I tease the underside of his head with my tongue and suck just the tip of him. I feel his hand slide into my hair as my eyes close and I pull more of him into my mouth, I use my hands on his thighs to steady myself as I go as far as I can. Fraction isn't a small man so I can't take all of him in, however when he hits the back of my throat I relax my throat muscles and he slides in just a little further. Just as I set in to really start working him he pulls my head up by the grip in my hair. I come off him with a pop and look up at him with a questioning look.

"Don't want your mouth." For a second I think he's going to refuse me but instead he puts his hands under my arms and lifts me to my feet. Sliding his hands down the side of my b*dy I gasp as I feel his rough fingers snap my panties. "you know what I want." Understanding what he wants I place a knee on either side of his legs and hold my now uncovered centre over him. I keep eye contact with him as I swirl my hips and let the tip of him slide through my folds. Throwing my head back I moan as I lower myself onto him as slowly as my b*dy will allow, once I have him fully in my I roll my hips which cause him to put both hands on my hips. Putting my hands on his shoulders I hold his eyes with mine as I pull myself up until he's almost fully out of me, I don't move until he growls slightly and then I slam my hips back down. Fraction helps me f uck myself on his c ock by moving his hips in time with mine, I feel my finger nails dig into his skin as his coc k finds that spot inside of me. I start to shake as I get close to my org asm,

I can feel his jeans rubbing against my n*ked thighs which is just heightening my desire.

"Cu m for me, little wolf" Fraction growls as I feel his thumb slami down on my cl it, that's all it takes before I'm clenching my thighs, my core tightens and a loud moan leaves my l*ps that sounds oddly like Fractions name. Opening my eyes I see Fraction close his as he holds me still and starts to power thrust into me, the chair we are in starts to squeak as Fraction gets faster and faster.

|||

O SEAR*ch on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

wek #memeli tum gerging mound the throating Utes to me me Thirs our he as me i
accedile gem the second the opens this ever AND THE BIOSE BOMeet the Holte
umwelll dill wohin me and core his Sande Desem um my age and full (brward onto him
on Heel the seed

1

Having my voals brothead on the calls events chest liter to the bean Sea drum We no
de garing loudly as we come dinn Tom our mutual high

Tone you little will

anything in neper

Prictton whogerents my hair. I don't as

que le s sons chest and close my eyes

Take a moment.

200 Vouchers

"Look at me." I tell him gasping around his thrusting, I try to move my hips but he has
me in a vice-like grip. The second he opens his eyes. and our eyes connect he holds
himself still within me and roars, his hands loosen on my hips and I fall forward onto him
as I feel his seed. spill into me.

Laying my sweaty forehead on his equally sweaty chest I listen to hist heart beat out a
drum. We are both panting loudly as we come down from our mutual high.

"Love you, little wolf." Fraction whispers into my hair, I don't say anything in response. I
just lay a k*ss on his chest and close my eyes, enjoying the moment.

18:19

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let
us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 152

In Place.

«Fraction>>

After my time with Anna in the office I feel relaxed for the first time in a long time, even driving towards The Shalamayne can't sour my mood right now. Today I make my family whole again, Aurora will be asleep in her own bed and James and Bellamy will be in the Pack house where they belong.

"Darryl is meeting us there?" Anna asks from the passenger seat of the SUV, looking over at her I can't help but notice her milky white thighs. She notices me looking and gives me a small smile that says she is thinking the same thing, it's been a while since me and Anna have connected like that. It was long overdue.

"Yeah, little wolf." I take my hand off the wheel and pull her hand up to my l*ps leaving a k*ss on it, "we get our baby back today." Anna's smile gets bigger as she relaxes back in her seat.

The plan is all set, we aren't sure which day they are planning on moving but when Sam told me the shifters were moved I knew it would be soon. We are going to be in the back part of the forest surrounding their homes and as soon as we see them packing up we will put a roadblock in place. I'm going to go for non violence, at first, Leo is praying for some bloodshed and I can't say I disagree. I'm all for talking your problems out but whoever is running the show signed their death certificate the second he ordered the hit on my Pack.

Pulling into the small field just past the gas station I put the car in park and wait for all the others to catch up.

"You ready?" I ask Anna turning towards her.

In Place

"I don't want to leave you but yeah, I've got this." Putting my hand behind Anna's head I pull her in to me and devour her mouth, I put every ounce of love and care I can into the k*ss. I make sure she knows how loved she is before we part, I don't like that we are splitting up but it's the best plan.

"You remember what to do?" I ask Anna as I break the k*ss.

"Shift but don't go too fast because Eliza will be on foot. Stay up wind

so Aurora can smell me,” I nod my head as Anna goes over the plan.

□

‘As soon as Aurora is with me I grab her and run as fast as I can back to the car. I don’t worry about Eliza, she can handle herself.’ Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

“That’s right, little wolf. The most important part is letting Winter run as fast as she can once you have our pup. I know you will want to stay and help Eliza but Cas will be there.” Anna just nods at me as she looks out of the passenger window to see Rick and Eliza pull up next to us. “Look at me little wolf.” I wait for her to look at me, it takes her a minute and I know she’s trying to pull herself together. “Promise me, no fighting. Just run.” I wait for Anna to nod before I open the door. and get out of the car, I see a few more cars pulling in and parking up. Darryl’s black Impala is the last car to pull in, he never was one for the normal, most Packs have SUV’s but not Darryl.

Walking around to the passenger side of the car I see Winter in all her white beauty already on all four paws and looking up at me. I stand still as she walks over to me sniffing my hand, I let my fingers fold through her white fur, starting at her head and letting her run my hand along her b*dy as she curls her way around me. It’s the perfect greeting for a public display, once she rubs her red stained rump against my thigh I pat her and walk over to Rick.

“Ready?” I ask him, he looks a little upset but I can’t blame him, he doesn’t like being split from Eliza either. “She will be fine, even pregnant Eliza is a strong female.”

27.21%

18 19

In Place

1200 Mouchers

“Pregnant not disabled. I’ll be fine,” Eliza says coming around the car, her l*ps looking swollen which tells me her and Rick have just had very much the same discussion as me and Anna. Eliza hands the pack to Winter and she holds the handle in her teeth, I give Winter one last pat on the head before the two of them head across the field and into the trees. Me and Rick watch them go until we can’t see them anymore.

“Are we ready for lads night in the forest?” Darryl joins us next to Rick’s car and I can’t help but laugh at his comment.

“Some lads night,” Darryl gives me a grim look before nodding. “Alright guys,” I shout to all of the warriors now out of their card. Thanks to Darryl and Cas we have about

seventy guys with us, it should be enough to put the fear of the Goddess in The Shalamayne. "You all know your assignments, if you're with Cas follow him, if you're with me and Darryl we will be hanging back here until called. Rick and Mac, take your guys up to meet Sam." No one says anything as the warriors split into three groups, there isn't much to be said. They all know their assignments and what they are doing now we are just waiting for the other side to make their move.

"Are you sure about this plan?" Darryl asks me after Rick and Mac walk off with their group of about thirty warriors.

"It will give them all time to do their jobs once everyone is safe, me and you can make our move." Darryl just nods at me as he pulls his pack further onto his shoulder.

"All right, let's hope we aren't freezing our balls off for too long." Together we walk over to our guys to get them ready to set up the road block, we will be the last stop for The Shalamayne. As long as everything goes to plan James, Bellamy and Aurora should all be safe long before they get this far down the road.

'Can you hear me little wolf?' I ask over our Pack link.

62.16%

Tm here, we are almost in place Winter says she can already feel Aurora " I smile as Anna answers me, as long as she stays where she's meant to I'll be able to reach her I'll knose the second our pup is safe, I'll know when I can kill the facker who dared take her

I'm no

Aurora.' I smile as Anna answers me, as long as she stays where she's

meant to I'll be able to reach her. I'll know the second our pup is safe,

I'll know when I can kill the f ucker who dared take her.

95 231

Search the **Find novel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 153

||

Aurora.

(Winter)

Waiting is not my strong suit, I'm more of a rip your throat out and talk about it later, kind of female. Anna is the complete opposite though, she's like the little angel sitting on my shoulder telling me to wait. We have been in the trees with Eliza for just over two days. There are only so many times I can groom myself and listen to Eliza complain about her back ache, I'm ready for something to happen. I know I have to wait so I can get Aurora out of here but right now I'm spoiling for some bloodshed.

'You promised.' Anna says, I can practically see her crossing her arms and giving me that mother look she does. I ignore her as I hear the squeak of metal on metal, turning towards the compound I perk up my ears and listen as car doors get closed and engines are started.

'It's starting.' I tell Fraction over our Pack link.

'Remember your job Winter.' I roll my eyes at him, I swear they both treat me like an uncontrollable pup sometimes, 'don't roll your eyes at me, little wolf.'

'Yes, Alpha.' I listen to him chuckle before the link closes. Standing still I let Eliza put the harness round my stomach, it's not uncomfortable but it doesn't feel right. It's a needed thing though so I can run with Aurora and not worry about her rolling around or flying off me.

'Now we wait.' Eliza tells me over the Pack link, I just nod at her as we slowly walk towards the edge of the trees overlooking the dirt road. I crouch down with my nose on my front paws waiting for the moment I

000

18:19

can snag Aurora, it doesn't take long before car after car starts to leave the compound. Most of them look like standard five door cars but the odd one is bigger and some look like those things they travel horses in.

'Rick has contacted James, soon Winter. Get ready.' Eliza tells me, I count sixteen cars before I catch Aurora's scent, I narrow my eyes as I try to pinpoint where she is.

“The red one, back seat.’ I quickly tell Eliza as my tail swishes through the leaves on the ground.

“Wait Winter, don’t go too soon.’ I can feel Anna’s anxiety and I push her further back. I know she’s worried but right now she needs to trust me to keep our pup safe.

Keeping my eyes trained on the red car I wait for it to stop, it should be anytime soon as long as everyone carries out their part of the plan. Personally it’s this part I don’t like, trusting the female who stole our pup to begin with doesn’t sit right with me.

“Stop!” I hear screamed, it sounds pretty far away so I doubt Eliza heard it, Eva has stopped the cars as planned. I watch as each car rolls to a stop, the red one with Aurora in is just four cars down from where we are waiting. As expected people start to get out of the cars to see what is going on, I tune Eva out as I keep my eyes on the red car willing them to get out. The driver and the passenger do exactly that just a minute late leaving Aurora and a male pup in the back of the car. I know she has smelt me because she has her little button nose pressed against the window looking for me, it’s killing me not to go to her but if a massive white wolf jumps out of the trees it will tip our hand before we are ready.

‘Go now.’ I tell Eliza, I watch as she carefully climbs through the trees. She’s wearing the dress Eva was wearing when she first came to us, Eliza walks slowly with her head held down in complete submission. The idea is to make her look like any other dutiful female shifter, she’s

emptied.

points at Eliza, “stay with the pups while we see what’s going on.

pounds in my chest as someone from the car in front Leave them alone and you won’t walk for a week.” The trees are blocking my view of the person but I can tell it’s a male, following what Eva told us about shifters here Eliza doesn’t say anything she just keeps her head down and walks towards the car.

I’m holding my breath as Eliza waits for more people to pass her. Once most of the people have run off to see what’s going on she looks from side to side and carefully opens the back door. I can feel my heart going crazy as I wait to see Aurora’s little feet, it seems to take an age for her to slip between the car and the partly open door.

‘Oh my Goddess!’ Anna squeals in my head as soon as Aurora comes into view, she’s wearing a tiny beige dress very much like the one Eliza is wearing. Her once bouncy blonde curls now hang limp and look like she hasn’t been bathed since she was taken. Even from my spot behind the trees I can smell the scents coming from her, she smells like rotten food and like she’s been living in a toilet. She’s wobbly on her legs as she clasps the hand of a very d*rtly looking little boy, he must be a little older than her but not by much.

'We can't take the boy.' I tell Eliza as she rushes the pups towards the trees.

'We are taking him Winter. We aren't leaving him here,' I don't know how she expects me to carry both of them back to the cars. I decide now is not the time to argue with her as she tries to get to the trees without being seen, I knew it was too good to be true because just as Aurora breaks into the trees she squeals when she spots my white fur. Someone must hear her because suddenly there are people yelling at Eliza to stop, she doesn't of course. Instead she picks up the boy at the same time as I clasp Aurora in my mouth, careful not to nip her I grab

43.981

|||

Aurom

288 Mouchers

her by her clothes and start running.

'We need to secure her, this cloth won't hold.' I tell Eliza as we weave around the trees, I can hear Eliza stomping behind me so she's definitely keeping up but I haven't started running full out yet.

"Momma!" Aurora yells as she bounces around under my chin.

'Stop here, quickly.' I skid to a halt next to a massive oak tree, dropping Aurora on the forest floor. I nuzzle my nose into her stomach, I try to block the scents coming off her as I check her for injury. Nothing seems a miss and soon Eliza is scooping her up and dropping her on my back.

"Hold tight sweetie, momma has to run very fast. Keep your head down and stay quiet." Eliza tells Aurora as she secures my pup onto my back.

"Silent game." Aurora asks softly. I've never played such a game with her and neither has Anna or Fraction so it must be something she has learnt here. "Hysion." At first I don't know who she's talking about but then I remember the scruffy looking little boy.

"I wolf?" The boy next to my head says, his voice is small and almost a whisper like he understands the urgency of the situation. I swivel my ears as I hear the trees being disturbed.

'We have company Eliza.' I tell her quickly as I feel her put the last strap in place.

'Don't leave the boy, Winter. 'I roll my eyes at Anna, these bleeding hearts are going to get us all killed.

“Can you shift?” I just huff, who has ever heard of a pup shifting, just as I am about to say that to Eliza a tiny black wolf is winding under my legs.

69.05%

Auroa

1288 Wouchers

‘Holy sh it.’ Anna exclaims in shock, I have to say I agree with that statement.

“Ok, Hysion. Stay with Winter, run as fast as you can until you see a big Alpha covered in tattoos.” I can hear Eliza’s voice shaking, she’s clearly in shock at the tiny pup changing too.

I don’t wait to see if he understands, as soon as he parts from my legs I set off running. I do exactly what Fraction told me to, I run. Fast. I keep my b*dy low to aid my speed, I let the trees blur past me. I glide over rocks and snap twigs under my paws. I can sense the pup running just behind me but I don’t pay

up but let’s be honest her him much attention. I hope he can keep

I’m holding precious cargo and right now Aurora is my priority. I almost stop as I hear Eliza scream out in pain but I listen to Anna and keep running. I hope Eliza is ok but right now I have to trust my best friend knows what she’s doing.

18 20

88 551

285 Wauchers

SEAR*ch the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Search the **FindNOVEL.NET** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 154

Ten, Nine, Eight...

(James)

For the last few days we have been packed into this room like sardines. in a tin, it's literally shifter on top of shifter. I've heard a few different languages floating around so I don't think they are all American, some of the older shifters are just sitting against the wall looking like this is all an old game. Meals have come sporadically and they only give us so much so it's been survival of the fittest when it comes to who eats and who doesn't. Me and Bellamy have shared all of our meals, if this room has taught me anything it's that Bellamy is one hell of a fighter. I assumed I was the stronger of the two of us because I'm Beta but I wouldn't be surprised if Bellamy has some Alpha buried deep within. Sarah flits by every now and again but otherwise she seems to stick with the other females at the far side of the room, many of them are Omega, one of them is a stick thin pale skinned thing. She can't be anymore than sixteen, I had to do a double take when I saw her. I could swear I've seen her with the Grey Pack before but according to Sarah she's been here forever.

The door at the end of the room has me rising, I've been listening to Bellamy's stomach growl for a while now so I need to get him some food.

"No food." Bellamy says from his spot on the floor, I just nod my head. Usually the smell of food is instant but this time there isn't anything. but people coming through the door.

"Get up Bell, something's happening." I hold my hand out to Bellamy to help him off the floor just as a guard walks past us carrying an assault rifle.

||

18:20

Ten. Nine Eight..

288 Vouchers

"You will file out in an orderly fashion, try to run and you will be shot." The guard yells as he walks through the crowd, "do something other than walk to where you are told, you will be shot."

"Breath in the wrong way and you will be shot." A sarcastic voice sounds from the elderly man on the floor next to my feet, the guard acts instantly. One second he's walking through the crowd the next he's raising his weapon and an overwhelmingly loud shot sounds around the room. A woman screams as warm blood splatters up my n*ked leg, looking down I see the elderly man slumped forward with a bullet hole directly between his eyes.

“Do anything I don’t like, you will be shot. Now move!” The guard roars from behind his headgear.

“Bellamy.” I say holding out my hand to him.

“Yup, already moving.” his hand is sweating in mine which is the only thing that betrays the nervousness he’s feeling.

It takes a while but soon we are stepping outside, I can see people being herded into cattle vans as if they are the animals they hold inside.

‘James?’ I turn my head to the left at the sound in my head, it sounded like Rick. ‘Get ready.’ I don’t answer, with a trigger happy guard around I need to keep my focus. I force Bellamy to hang back, I have a feeling we are going to want to be as close to the doors as possible. The inside of the van stinks to high heaven, the horses they had in here before us, they haven’t bothered to clean it and I try not to think about what is between my toes.

“Where are we going?” I hear someone in our van ask in a low voice, whoever she is, she sounds on the verge of a breakdown.

“I don’t know, just stay quiet and do as you’re told.” I hear a female

21.691

O

18 20

Ten Nine Eight

289 Vouchers. Search the FindNovel.net website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

voice say in a soothing tone. I use my hand on the metal wall to steady myself as the van starts to slowly move forward, Bellamy is pressed. against my front with only one other man in front of us.

“Be ready, Rick is here.” I lean into Bellamy’s ear so I can whisper directly to him, sure I could use the Pack link but why risk being caught off guard. Bellamy doesn’t ask any questions which makes me think Rick has spoken to him too.

We aren’t moving for long before we are all jolted forward as the van slams to a stop. Suddenly my nose is filled with the scent of fresh blood and the man in front of us starts complaining about a broken

nose.

'Incoming.' Rick sing songs through the Pack link, I feel Bellamy tense up which means he heard the same thing.

"We're stuck Rick.' I tell Rick so he knows that we don't have a way out.

'Sure because why would you do any of the heavy lifting from here,' I know he's taking the piss but it rubs me the wrong way after weeks of captivity. 'As soon as you're out I need you to run for the trees, Mac is waiting with warriors. He has a knife to cut the tracker off both of you.'

'What's the hold up?' I ask him, I can feel myself getting antsy and I know it's because the Pack are so close. I can almost taste freedom.

"They have Aurora, we are waiting for Winter to confirm she has her before we move.' Rick tells me, I gasp aloud and some of the people in the van turn to look at me, I ignore them all.

'Rick,' I put every ounce of Beta into my voice that I can. 'You don't touch this van until that pup is clear, not one damn paw.' Bellmay nods. his head so I k*ss the back of his hair in affection. Honestly, the fact that this man agrees with me makes me know he's perfect for me.

44 70%

288 Voucher

"When we get out of here, I'm going to mate you so hard you're never going to forget who you belong to." I whisper into Bellamy's ear, I feel him shiver against me.

"Is that a promise?" Any other situation I'd have him flat on his back showing him how much I mean what I said.

'She's clear! In ten, nine, eight, seven,' the link cuts off but I start men tally counting at the same speed as Rick. I'm so focused on the counting that I don't realise the doors are opening until Bellamy starts to pull me forward.

The people around us stand stock still, probably afraid it's the trigger happy guard coming back to do some more shooting. We use that to our advantage and push through the few in front of us, we fall from the van with very little grace. I hear Bellamy curse as he lands on his knees but he's up and running for the trees within a split second, I waste no time in following him. I don't look around to see where we are, who is looking or what caused us to stop. I run as fast as I can until I am passing a tree and

someone is grabbing my arm. Just as I am about to start swinging a hand clamps over my mouth and my shoulder is being

feel them into. I roar out in pain but the hand muf fles my scream. I

feel the blood trickling down my chest as I watch someone I don't

know dig his fingers into my shoulder and pull them out covered in blood but holding a little blinking bullet..

"Clear." He whispers.

"Clear." I hear another voice shout from my left, I look over to see Bellamy in much the same state as me with Rick holding his hand over his mouth.

"Alright, can you shift?" Mac whispers, I dig deep before shaking my head. "Da mn it." Mac curses just as I hear fabric ripping and Bellamy's sandy wolf walks in front of me tilting his head to the side. I dig down. deep and there in the dark is Zeus, he's tired and groggy but he nods.

|||

18:20

Ten, Nine, Eight..

288 Wouchers

his head at me as I pull him up and out.

Zeus doesn't have time to stretch or even greet Ru because there is a door slamming behind us, telling us the vans are going to start moving again.

"We need to get back to Fraction." Rick says before shifting into his own wolf and heading North of where we are. I let Ru go first so I can keep him in my sight, I need to make sure he's safe, I don't wait to see if the others follow, I just let Zeus take over and race through the trees.

93.44%

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 155

Yes, Sir.

(Eva

I've never felt warmth like this, it's not something I have ever felt so I nuzzle my face further into it. I'm not sure what I thought I was nuzzling myself into but when the warmth below me chuckles I open my eyes and quickly push myself away from it.

"Comfy?" Cas smirks at me as he puts an arm behind his head looking like the most relaxed man on the planet. Looking at him you wouldn't think we have been in the forest for two days trapped in this tent, I haven't been allowed to leave unless Cas is with me. The warriors all stare and whisper so unless I've needed the bathroom I've just stayed put.

"Why," I clear my throat of its sleepy grogginess. "Why are you n*ked?" Cas moves the blanket down showing his joggers and I breathe a sigh of relief. While he's definitely something fun to look at, the idea of waking up with a n*ked male had my heart pounding in my chest.

"Only took my shirt off when you started draping yourself over me. Cas tells me. I don't remember doing that but I must have considering I woke up pretty much on top of him. "You ready?" I just nod my head as he sits up and stretches putting his chest on full display, he's completely smooth with not a single mark on him. I long to run my tongue along his skin to see what he tastes like, I turn away from him before I do exactly that.

"What if I mess this up? What if they don't stop?" I voice my questions. at the tent wall as I listen to Cas rustle around in his backpack.

|

1870

"You won't." I don't know why he has such belief in me but he sounds so sure.

"You don't know that." I turn around to see he has a shirt on and is

running a hand through his dark hair. "What if they just run me down and keep going? What if Anna never gets her pup back or they kill James and his mate?" I can feel the panic rising up in me, "what if..." Cas moves so quickly, I didn't even know a man of his size could move that quick. One second he's on the other side of the tent and the next he's in front of me with a hand on either side of my head. My eyes lock with his deep blue ones as he just stares at me.

"Stop it." He's speaking low, his voice seems to send this calmness over me, "stop worrying about the what ifs. Just do what they have asked and when it's all done hope they use it as a reason to send you away instead of killing you."

"Maybe death is what I deserve." I say trying to move my head but his hands just tighten keeping me in place.

"I never want to hear you say that again, do you understand me?" His voice has taken on a harshness that it didn't have before, I nod my head as much as his grip will allow. "Answer me!" He demands.

"Yes." I watch as his jaw clenches, as if he doesn't like my answer.

"Yes what?" I don't know what he wants so I answer him in the only way that feels right.

"Yes, Sir." Cas nods at me and lets go of my head, using one of his hands he strokes my hair silently telling me he approves of my answer.

"Good girl." Cas whispers just as someone coughs outside of the tent, it breaks the spell he has put me under and I scamper away from him and over to his Pack where I know there is some clean clothes for me

to wear.

19.111.

18:20

Yes Sir.

1288 Vouchers

It takes me only a matter of minutes to change into a clean top and jogging bottoms. Thankfully Cas keeps his back to me the whole time allowing me a small amount of privacy, Just as I'm about to ask for something to eat one of the warriors calls out to Cas.

"What?" Cas asks looking over at me before opening the tent, I see a young warrior who has been in the forest for weeks now.

“They’re moving, it’s time.” The warrior tells Cas, he looks back at me and I just nod my head telling him that I’m ready. Following Cas from the tent I keep my eyes cast down to avoid the looks the warriors give me, I learnt very quickly that none of them like me. The warriors Cas seems to know seem alright with me but they still don’t talk to me or even look at me, at least they don’t whisper abuse at me when I pass them.

“Alright lads, let’s go.” Cas holds his hand out to me and I take it letting him lead me through the trees. “Remember, make them stop. Give Eliza and Rick time to get the pup and the guys out and then make your move. We just need a small delay,” Cas goes over the plan as he guides me through the trees. “As soon as they are clear we will leave. That’s your cue to end it.”

“And then I let them put me in the car where we will carry on down the road.” I finish the plan to him and he just nods. Just as we reach the end of trees I pull on Cas’s hand, he stops letting the other warriors walk ahead of him.

“What is it? They are almost here, I can hear the cars.” I place my hand palm flat on his chest and look him in the eye.

“I wish I had known you without all this pain,” I can see the confusion in his eyes as I step away from him and walk towards the dirt road.

“I’ll see you soon, kid.” Cas calls after me, I don’t answer him as I keep

walking, I try to stop the tears from falling down my face as I step out of the trees. I know there is a very big chance that I won’t make it out of this alive and if it means Anna gets her pup back then I’m okay with that. I don’t know why I feel drawn to Cas and I would have loved nothing more than to find out but maybe it’s for the best that it ends like this.

Standing in the middle of the road I listen to the sound of engines approaching me, I alter my stance so my legs are about a shoulder’s width apart. Raising my head I try to school my features. The last thing I want is to tip my hand and ruin the plan for everyone, it’s okay if I die here but not until the ones I’ve hurt are safe. This is my chance to put everything right.

“Stop!” I scream as loudly as I can while holding my hands out in front of me. The black car in the front screeches as it slams its brakes on. My heart starts pounding in my chest as I see the two men in the front of the car just look at me as the cars and vans behind them all come to a stop.

“Zoe. We thought you had become lost to the wild.” Reginald says climbing from his car, “what are you doing wolf?”

“I made a mistake,” I speak loudly so he can hear me, he doesn’t have a wolf to aid his hearing so I need to make sure he can hear me as he walks closer. “Dean didn’t show

up and I didn't know where to go." Lies, I know he killed Dean, the warrior told Cas all about it my first night back in the forest.

"Dean will not show, wolf." Reginald is standing mere inches from me now, I can smell the sickly sweet roses coming from him as he adjusts the cuffs of his dress shirt. "How about we get you in the car and we can discuss your punishment when we get home?" Search the Find_ website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

"Home?" I feign confusion, "I thought this was home. I didn't think I

63.51%

18 201

travelled that far."

"Oh, wolf. You travelled just far enough, now you can get in the car on your own or I can have Lewis break your legs and drag you to it." He has this smirk on his face that tells me he's hoping I will refuse, he loves to see us suffer.

"Where is Dean?" I sniff a little and the smell of soft leather and sea salt is gone, which means Aurora, James and Bellamy are safe and I'm alone with my punisher.

"He's in the car, let's go wolf. I haven't got all day." I pause for a second, if I give up too easily Reginald will know something is wrong. After a brief delay I slowly start walking towards the car. I can hear shouting somewhere in the distance but it's faint, if I can barely hear it the humans won't be able to. I let out a fake cry when I get to the car and see Dean is not there. I don't get a chance to do anymore acting though as a hand comes over my mouth from behind. My nose is filled. with a God awful smell that has me choking and gasping for breath before I feel myself falling as darkness comes.

86.631

18:20

Search the **FindNOvel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 156

Waiting.

«Fraction)

“One more on the left, make sure they can’t mount that grassy bit.” Darryl tells one of the warriors, they are moving the cars so that The Shalamayne can’t get past us. The wait is killing me, I sort of hoped it would be over quickly but it’s been two days, two days of Anna and Rick in the forest watching and waiting. I haven’t slept for fear of missing the call that they are moving. I’m waiting for Winter to send the message but it hasn’t come yet.

“Think they are onto us?” I ask Darryl as we watch the last car put into place.

“Nah, we are way too far back and Eva said they never leave the compound unless they are moving.” I cross my arms over my chest and sigh.

“I think we are putting too much trust in the pup,” I still don’t like the idea of Eva being the one to make sure the group stops. It was the only thing that made sense though.

“I think you need to look at the big picture, that poor kid is so broken she’s held together with duct tape and safety pins.” I don’t disagree with Darryl, Eva carries this air about her that makes you want to hold her and never let her go. It’s the reason we took her in when we found her the first time around.

‘It’s starting.’ Winter growls over our Pack link.

‘Remember your job Winter.’ I warn Winter to behave and I swear I can feel her roll her eyes at me. ‘don’t roll your eyes at me, little wolf.’

0.00%

Waiting

288 Vouchers

‘Yes, Alpha.’ I chuckle as I close down the link, Winter is anything but submissive so it makes me laugh when she tries.

“Let’s go.” Darryl nods at me, “alright guys, they will be here soon. Shift and get ready, remember Rick and Mac’s team is coming from the left and Anna will be coming from the right.” I watch the warriors around us start to shift into wolves, “attack my Luna and

there will be hell to pay.” Normally I wouldn’t have to warn a warrior about attacking a Luna but they are on high alert and it’s possible a mistake can be made.

weir

Standing in front of the cars I lean against the bonnet of Darryl’s Impala but quickly stand back up again when he looks at me with his wolf in his eyes.

“Calm. It’s just a car.” I cock an eyebrow at him and smirk.

“Wash your mouth out boy.” I laugh loudly at his face, he looks like someone just kicked his pup and then spat in his face. I never realised the man took his car so seriously. The smile is quickly wiped off my face as I hear engines approaching us. “Show time.” Darryl says with an equally serious face, we move shoulder to shoulder with our arms crossed, I can feel Darryl pulsing his Alpha Aura and I’m sure he can feel mine too. The humans don’t know what it is but with two strong Alpha’s they will be able to feel the presence of it too once they are close enough.

‘I have a tail, some help would be good.’ I hear Winter call over the Pack link just as a black car comes into view. I want nothing more than to help but I can’t move right now, instead I turn to the wolf at my side, he’s one of Cass’s guys. [SEARCH THE FINDNOVEL.NET](#) website on [Gøøgle](#) to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

“Help Winter, she has a follower.” The wolf runs off before I even finish speaking, they all know Winter and Anna’s role and who she has with her. The black car in the front comes to a stop not too far from us,

Waring

288 Vouchers

I can see two males in the front and a small female leaning against the window in the back, she seems to be unconscious.

“What’s the meaning of this then?” A man dressed in a smart three piece suit steps from the black car, he’s a fairly young man. I’d put him at around thirty, maybe thirty-five at a push. I watch him adjust his grey waist coat over his pale pink dress shirt as he walks towards me and Darryl. The sound of a growl draws his eyes to the side and he stops as Winter runs out of the trees with Aurora on her back, there is a small black wolf running between her legs and a man in full camouflage gear running after her with an assault rifle. “Ah, I see you got to the kids, not to matter. They will be back with us soon.” The man has a smirk on his face as the camouflage man takes aim, just before he can shoot though the wolf I sent to aid Winter runs full out at him and clamps his leg in his jaw, the man drops the gun and starts to punch the wolf as he roars in pain. Like a good warrior he doesn’t let up until his prey is flat on the floor.

“You’re not dealing with children now.” Darryl says smugly.

“Weak.” The man shouts as I look back at him, I’m dying to go to Winter and check on Aurora but right now I need to hold my place. “He was weak, I have no use for weak.”

“Not weak,” I say, crossing my arms over my chest. “Just human.”

“What do you want?” The man is going red in the face, it’s the only thing that gives away his anger.

“I’m Fraction, Alpha of the Swiftmane Pack. The white wolf is my mate and the pup on her back is our pup, you stole my pup.” It’s so hard to keep my anger in check, I want to pound this man into the floor but we need to know if he’s the leader before we act.

“It’s of no matter, you have two and an Omega wh ore you screw every chance you get. I bet there will be more for us to take soon enough,” I

take a step forward but Darryl stops me with a slight cough. “What? Not the bosses permission to make a move?” He’s taunting me, which means he thinks he has the upper hand.

“You’re used to dealing with females and pups, you have no idea what we are capable of” I say between clenched teeth as Darryl lets out a loud whistle. The man looks around and I see the first sign of unease as wolves come through the trees, surrounded from the front and both sides. “The only way you’re getting out of here is when you let all of the prisoners go and give us your boss.”

“Well gentlemen. I’m Reginald Baradriel and this is my community.” He spreads his arms out as if to display those behind him, I see a few men start to walk down the line of cars. All are in camouflage and holding guns. “you have your pup and I know you have your Beta and his sinful mate. I will not let anymore of my group leave.” Reginald takes a step forward. “So you either back down and let us pass or we kill the pregnant wh ore,”

A fierce growl from my left has me turning to see Rick swishing his tail and slowly walking towards the man who has emerged from the trees holding Eliza at gunpoint. Her l*p is blo ody and she has a bruise blooming on the side of her face, I hold my hand up a little telling Rick to wait.

“You won’t kill her.” I tell him as I keep Eliza and the man in my eyesight.

“Won’t I? I think you underestimate my distaste for your kind.” Reginald has a smug smirk on his face, he thinks he has the upper hand, “you think I haven’t known you were out here? Waiting like a good little dog. Da mn, the only thing you didn’t do was hand me your Omega yourself.”

“Oh you misunderstand.” I step towards him until I am barely an arms

65.34%

08 16

Wading

288 Vouchers

distance away, “you wont kill her because there is nothing more fierce than a pregnant female. Your man was dead the second he spotted her, she’s exactly where she wants to be.” I hope Eliza is listening and understanding my meaning.

“So what? You kill us all and then what? You think this stops, you think we are the only group?” I narrow my eyes at him as I nod my head at Eliza, she does exactly what I expect. She grabs the guy’s arm and with ease she fl*ps him over her back and onto the floor in front of her, she easily keeps him in place with her foot on his throat.

“Do it.” Darryl says as I maintain eye contact with Reginald.

“We are more organised than you think, if there are more of you out there we will find you.” I tell Reginald as Rick races past us and jumps on the male threatening his mate, he digs his claws into his chest and shreds the man through his armor. The man doesn’t make a sound thanks to Eliza’s foot on his throat.

87.66%

Search the **Findnovel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 157

Blood.

(Fraction)

“Take them, take the American shifters. It’s of no consequence to me,” Reginald suddenly has a stench of fear about him.

“They will all be set free, we won’t leave any shifters here to be

tortured by you.” Reginald’s eyes flick to the black car and a man steps out, he’s younger but dressed very similarly

“Reg. let them go and live to fight another day “The younger man says in a low whisper to Reginald, I chuckle.

“You do realise we can hear you?” I raise my eyebrow at the men, “you aren’t leaving. You sealed your fate the day you decided to take my Beta and pup.”

“That wasn’t me, dog.” Reginald says as I growl at him, I have to say being called a dog does not sit right with me or Leo. “After you killed her granddaughter it seems you had one pissed off female. She called in the marker, I haven’t been back in this God forsaken country for years.”

‘Who did we kill?’ Leo asks me as he prowls in the back of my mind, he’s ready to be let out and end this. I don’t answer him as I watch some of the people leaving their cars to see what’s going on.

“Doesn’t matter who called it in, you’re the one who sent in a kid to do your dirty work.” I look at the people behind him, “how many more of them do you force to do the jobs you’re too scared to do? That’s it right? You’re too scared to face us yourself so you have women and children do your job for you,”

0.00%

|||

Blood

288 Nouchers

“I’ve taken down bigger and badder Alpha’s than you.” Reginald brags, he looks behind him. “Back in your cars, we are leaving.”

Just as Reginald turns away from me I grab him by his shirt collar and pull him into me.

“No one is leaving,” I roar as I turn Reginald around to put him on display to his flock. “This man will have you believe that we are vicious murderous animals. Yet he is the one who enslaves people, has them kidnap children and murder elderly ladies.” I grip Reginald’s throat in my hand and he gasps for breath. “If you want out of here you will open the vans and let the shifters walk away. No harm will come to any of you.”

“Don’t believe him!” Reginald shouts before I manage to cut off his air supply.

“Keep talking and I just grip tighter.” I look back to the people who are all watching the show, “ask Eva. Or should I say Zoe, she was stolen from her Pack at such a young age she can’t even remember her parents. She was raised to hate herself and everything about her own kind, then this man.” I shake Reginald a little. “this man sent her into my Pack to steal my pup! And what did I do, Reg?” I walk forward a little giving Reginald no choice but to move with me, he’s clawing at my hand to try and make me let him go. “She came back to my Pack, she felt guilty for what she had done. I could have killed her there and then, instead I gave her clean clothes and three meals a day and today she has helped us get our Pack members back. So Reg, who’s the real monster?”

“If we let them go can we leave?” A small woman asks loudly.

“Shut

up

Janet!” I hear shouted from the younger man who left the car.

“An Alpha’s word is a promise,” Darryl shouts out. “You will all be

19.37%

|||

08 16

Blood

17 288 Vouchers

allowed to leave, the only person we want is Reginald and anyone stands with him.”

who

Slowly the people who are not armed start to walk towards the vans, as the guards try to stop them one of our warriors snaps at them and they quickly retreat backwards.

“Are you seeing this Reg?” I whisper into his ear, “do you see how easy it is for us dogs to take you down?” I want him to know that everything he has done is for nothing, he hasn’t accomplished anything.

“You think this is it?” Reginald gasps as I grip his throat tighter, “you think I care about a few dozen shifters? You think this matters to The Shalamayne? Take me down and more will rise in my place. We have been on this earth longer than you have.” I arch an eyebrow at Darryl who just shrugs his shoulders at me.

“You heard enough?” Darryl just nods at me.

“Enough to make sure every Pack between here and the sea is on alert for these fuckers, The Shalamayne won't ever touch another American shifter.” Darryl tells him as he turns and walks away.

“Take one last look at that Reggie boy.” I move us so he can watch his flock help the shifters off the van as the younger man tries to stop them, “see how quickly they go against you?”

“Daddy!” I smile as Aurora shouts out for me from somewhere behind me.

“I wanted this to be bloody, to really take my time but my pup is here and she's been through enough.” I'm so close to Reginald's ear that my lips are actually tickling his hair, “rest uneasy.” Allowing Leo to take over just slightly I feel my hand squeeze until Reginald's throat crushes beneath my fingers. I slowly lower him to the floor so it looks like he's sleeping, I don't know if Aurora can see me but the last thing I

43.10%

O

L

08 16

Blood

288 Vouchers

want is for her to see me covered in blood while standing over a dead b*dy.

“Go to your pup, I've got this.” Cas walks up behind me and claps me on the shoulder, for a young Alpha he has a solid head on his shoulders.

“Eva? She did good.” Cas just nods at me as his eyes flick to the black car, “she needs to come back to Swiftmane, at least for now.”

“Yeah, I know she does. You'll keep your promise though?” Cas asks me, a few days ago when I proposed the plan he told me that if he talked Eva into helping he would only do it if I only banished her from Swiftmane and not all Packs. I have my suspicions as to why but I let it go, he'll come to me when he needs my advice. I clap him on the shoulder and nod my head letting him know I haven't forgotten my promise.

Walking over to the cars, it takes me a minute to maneuver my way through them but soon I'm coming across a sight I've been dying to see for weeks. Sure, they are both filthy and smell like they need a good bath but there next to my car is James smiling at Aurora as she waves her arms at me. I feel a lump rising in my throat at seeing my pup for the first time in a long time but also that my best friend is unharmed and actually there.

"Hey kiddo," I crouch down as soon as I'm in front of her, "how about we get you home. I know Thomas has missed you." Aurora throws herself at me as much as her little b*dy will allow, I pick her up and snuggle her into my chest. It's then that I notice Anna standing with a little b*dy dressed in one of my shirts, "and who's this?"

"Hysion!" Aurora squeals while trying to get down, I settle her on the floor and she immediately runs to her new friend.

"Take it we have a tag along?" I ask Anna.

66.82%

III

0876

Blood. search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

288 Vouchers

"Well James gets to bring this one," Anna nods her head at a beaming Bellamy, "so I figure Aurora can have this one." I smile at them all before looking behind me, Darryl waves his hand at me letting me know he has it from here.

"Alright, how about we get home? I feel like a trip to the medical centre is in order." James and Bellamy jump into the backseat of the car, I don't miss how Bellamy snuggles into James's side. Aurora sits on Anna's knee in the passenger seat, she instantly starts looking round for Hysion but settles when she sees the little boy next to Bellamy. Starting the car I drive my family away from the place that has been their hell for weeks.

90.68%

Search the **Find_** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 158

A bone deep sadness.

(Anna)

Dropping myself onto the top step of the stairs I lean my head against the wall and close my eyes. There is no point in going to bed, Aurora had a bath and then I put her down to sleep, she's been awake four times since then. Screaming out for me or Fraction, scared we aren't there and that someone has taken her again.

"Everything okay, little Omega?" I look up to see Elder Thomas standing at the bottom of the stairs look up at me, I smile a little when I see him in blue pyjamas. I've never seen the man outside of his Elder robes.

"Aurora is having trouble sleeping." I tell him as I settle back against the wall.

"Ah, I thought I heard some wailing. I assumed it was the other pup, not Aurora." He walks up the steps until he's just two down from me and sits down looking up at me. "You seem tired, I thought having everyone home would make you happy."

"It does, I am happy." I look down at him, his face is completely blank, there is no judgement there. "I'm also very sad, I can feel it down in my bones. Aurora is scared and this is the one place she should always be happy and Fraction," I run my hands through my hair. "He killed someone, for me. Again."

"He didn't kill for you little one, he killed for his family. He killed to keep you whole and together, trust me, he feels no guilt for what he did." As he tells me this I hear a mumbling over the baby monitor in my hand so I pick it up and hold it to my ear. Aurora doesn't cry out

0.00%

|||

O

08.17

A bone deep sadness.

1288 Vouchers

though it sounds as if she's just moving around in her sleep, sighing I drop it back on the step next to me.

"I can't do this anymore." I feel the tears slide down my face. "I feel like every time something gets fixed in my life something else breaks, I don't know how to keep it from breaking."

"Didn't your dreams with Ocean teach you anything?" Elder Thomas puts his hand on mine. "not everything can be fixed. Just because something is different or has to be patched doesn't mean it's broken."

"I don't dream of her anymore." I admit to him. "I haven't had a sewing dream in years." I can't say I have obsessed about it much, after Ocean showed me who she really is I hoped I would never see her again.

"Ocean can only come into your dreams if you allow it, dream walking is a very rare gift but it's not without limitations." Elder Thomas lets go of my hand and stands from the step. "if you wish I can sit with her for a while. It might help soothe the pain and fear within her."

"You can get in her head?" Elder Thomas nods his head rather than answering, "was my mother an Omega?"

"No she wasn't." Elder Thomas gets a sad look in his eyes as I bring up his daughter. "my father was the Omega."

"There are male Omega's?" I ask before I can stop myself.

"Of course, they are rare though. I thought the Omega blood had skipped my generation but it seems it just passed to you. I got some of the abilities but not the designation." I look down at my hands and start picking at my fingers.

"That's why you can do what you do? Because you have some Omega in you?" Elder Thomas walks past me up the stairs as I ask him about his designation. I can smell he is a Beta but the spicey smell to his

23.65%

<

08.17

A bone deep sadness

blood now makes sense. "That's why you smell different."

"It is. Now I'm going to spend some time with my granddaughter if that's okay?" I just nod my head as he continues on into Aurora's bedroom. Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Clutching the baby monitor in my hand I listen as Elder Thomas sits himself down and then there is nothing but silence. All I can hear is the soft snores from Aurora.

"Little wolf?" I jump a little when I see Fraction walking up the stairs, "do we hang out on the stairs now?"

"Aurora had another bad dream." I tell him as he helps me up off the step.

"Is she settled now?" Fraction asks, looking over my shoulder at the partly open door.

"Elder Thomas is with her, he said he can help her overcome the fear." Fraction raises an eyebrow at me.

"You took his help?" Fraction sounds shocked that I would,

"I'm too worried not to accept the help. What if she's messed up for life? What if Eva taking her to that place has done damage that can't be undone?" Fraction cups my face in his hands as I start to spiral down in panic.

"Breath little wolf." I take a few deep breaths, "I'm not saying it's a bad thing to take his help. I'm just surprised you did, it's not like you have spoken to the man much since he dropped the family bomb." The door behind us closing has Fraction dropping his hands and looking behind me, "how is she?"

"She will be fine, the memories will fade more and more each day.

50.76%

|||

O

08:17

A bone deep andness

På tajutav

Nothing untoward happened to her.” I relief flood my b*dy as he tells us this. “Her biggest worry is being taken again, I soothed that concern as much as I could. If I remove it totally a new fear will take its place.”

“My mother, did she see it?” I turn to see Elder Thomas shaking his head.

“Eva was very gentle with her and blocked her from seeing Beth.” Elder Thomas walks down the steps past us, “just so you know. Eva was nothing but kind to Aurora, she went to visit her most nights and helped her as much as she could. I don’t think that pup wanted to take Aurora at all.” With that Elder Thomas walks back along the corridor towards his room.

“There, now can we go to bed?” I nod at Fraction as he clasps my hand and leads me back to our room. “Long day tomorrow.”

“What’s happening tomorrow?” I ask Fraction as I close the bedroom door to see him dropping his jeans and climbing into our bed.

“I want to bury my mother tomorrow, it’s time for her to be laid to rest.” I shimmy out of my leggings and climb into the bed next to him.

“Of course you do.” I snuggle into him, placing my head over his heart, “I don’t want the pups there though, they have been through so much lately.”

“I agree, I’ll get one of the Pack members to come and watch over them.” Fraction squeezes me into his side and places a k*ss on my head before leaning over to turn off the lamp.

Today has been a tough day and tomorrow will be another but I’m hopeful that soon we can put it all behind us. I meant what I said to Elder Thomas, I’m so sick of being sad, of feeling scared. Maybe once Momma Beth has been laid to rest we can move on and live our lives

73.06%

=

08 170

A bone deep sadness.

as we are meant to without all the drama.

99.32%

|||

1288 Vouchers

08.17

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 159

Goodbye.

(James)

“If you will allow me, I have a poem I found that I feel sums up what Momma Beth means to all of us “I look around as the pack looks up at me. “She’s the whisper of the leaves as you walk down the street. She’s the smell of certain foods you remember, flowers you pick, the fragrance of life itself. She’s the cool hand on your brow when you’re not feeling well She’s your breath in the air on a cold winters’ day She is the sound of the rain that lulls you to sleep, the colours of a rainbow She is Christmas morning Your mother lives inside your laughter She’s the place you come from, your first home. She’s the map you follow with every step you take She’s your first love, your first friend, even your first enemy. But nothing on Earth can separate you Not time Not space. Not even death” The gathering is quiet once I’m done, looking to my side I can see Anna blowing her nose as Fraction gives her a one armed hug

I step aside as Elder Thomas makes his way up onto the platform we have erected near the burial site Momma Beth’s coffin sits in a hole waiting to be covered over. Fraction wanted an open casket but it’s been too long since her death. He wanted to do this sooner but he told me he wanted to wait until he had his family home. I think part of him knew I would want to be here for this Of all the things that have surprised me since coming back, Momma Beth dying while trying to stop Zoe, I mean Eva from taking Aurora has to be the worst thing of all Momma Beth took me in when my own family cast me out, now that I’ve accepted who me and Bellamy are to each other I hoped to introduce her to him.

“That was beautiful.” Bellamy says as I go to stand next to him, I place

0.00%

田

my hand in his not caring who sees, right now I need his comfort too much to care about people's judgement

"Beth or Momma Beth as so many of you knew her as." Elder Thomas speaks to the Pack as he looks down at Momma Beth's coffin "She was the guiding hand within this Pack, she grew her family here, went through heartache and pain here Now we say our goodbyes as we lay her to rest next to her Alpha " He throws some dirt on top of the coffin before continuing. "although we feel sadness at her passing we must share in the joy that she brought to this Pack Momma Beth was a force to be reckoned with, she loved hard and unlike no other I have ever known. One of the best pleasures in my life was knowing Beth, may she forever run with the Goddess

"May she forever run with the Goddess" The Pack repeats after him. it's like a prayer they are sending up to the heavens. Looking up I can see the clear blue sky shining down on us as if Momma Beth herself is smiling

Fraction nods at Elder Thomas as they pass on the platform, Fraction just stands there looking out at the Pack, all wearing black and all mourning the passing of his mother

"Thank you all for coming." Fraction speaks to the Pack with a sad look on his face "As Momma Beth is laid to rest there will be a small gathering at the PAck house As per her wishes this will not be a sad affair. It's to be a celebration of her life, as she would have wanted we encourage you to bring your pups and loved ones along Let's make sure we remember my mother the way she would have wanted " I look over at Anna as Fraction walks down the platform and the Pack starts to disperse, Anna just shrugs her shoulders at me.

"You didn't want to say anything more?" I ask my Alpha and friend, I

half expected him to have more to say about his mother.

27.41%

IE

Goodbye

283 NoucherS

"She knows how I feel," Fraction smiles at me as he pulls Anna into a hug. "Will you and Bellamy stay with us?" I feel Bellamy squeeze my hand as Fraction asks us to stay for the actual burial.

"Of course we will." Bellamy answers for us both, it takes a while for the Pack to leave the graveside. Most stop to give Fraction and Anna a hug or some kind words, some

even stop to offer their condolences to me which confuses me. I know how important Momma Beth was to me but I never realised the Pack knew.

The sun is starting to set by the time it's just the four of us alone with Momma Beth, I hear the clang of metal behind me and see Rick and Eliza walking towards us with some shovels. Fraction shucks his suit jacket off at the same time as me, Bellamy takes mine so I can roll my shirt sleeves up.

"Shall we?" Rick asks as he hands me and Fraction a shovel.

"What's happening?" Anna asks as she follows us to the graveside, of course she's confused, she's never seen a proper Pack burial.

"The immediate family normally covers the grave of a family member." Bellamy tells Anna as me and Fraction start to drop the dirt over Momma Beth's coffin, "it's a sign of great respect and many years ago they said it would allow the passers soul to rest easy."

"Oh, I had no idea. Should I?" I see Fraction smile at Anna as she asks Bellamy the question.

"Usually it's just the blood relation, Fraction has allowed James to help because he was a son to her in all but blood. Even as Luna you have to wait to be invited but don't take offence if he doesn't." I look back at Bellamy and smile. I really appreciate him taking the time to kindly explain this to Anna.

"Little wolf, of course you can help." Fraction says holding the shovel

45.92%

|||

<

08.17

Goodbye

288 Vouchers

out to her, Anna takes it with a sad smile and starts to drop some dirt into the ever filling hole. She only does a few scoops before passing it back to Fraction and going to stand next to Bellamy, Rick and Eliza.

The six of us stand around Momma Beth's grave, Eliza bends down and puts a single rose on top of the mound of dirt.

"I wanted you to be the first to know," she whispers while looking down. "We are having a baby girl." Her hand rests on her stomach, "I wish you could have met her." Eliza stands back up and Rick pulls her into a hug.

"Shall we?" Rick asks the group, all of us nod but as we go to move Fraction just stays where he is.

"I've got him, you go ahead." I tell Anna in a whisper, Bellamy takes her hand and leads her back to the Pack house with Eliza and Rick. For a while we both stand there in silence looking down at Momma Beth. "Do you remember that time I snuck out to go and see that bloke a few towns over?" Fraction smiles at the memory.

"I thought she was going to kill you." Fraction says while laughing a little, "I've never seen her so mad."

"You could have been killed." I say in my best Momma Beth voice, "or worse." Fraction is howling by the time I'm done, "I still don't know what she meant, what's worse than being killed?"

"Well the S** talk was definitely worse than being killed." I laugh as I remember Momma Beth teaching us how to put a condom on a cucumber, "her trying to tell you that although you can't get a guy pregnant you still need to use one. I've never seen her go so red in my life."

"You know she's not gone right? She's still here with us. The fact that

68.42%

III

O

08:17

11 108 Machers

we can laugh like this is a true testament to how she raised both of us Fraction smiles at me before turning from the graveside and walking across the field.

"So Bellamy is sticking around huh?" I roll my eyes at him, since being back we haven't spoken about Bellamy even though he's been with me constantly Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

"You want me to say you were right?" Fraction nods his head.

“Can’t be that right, noticed he still doesn’t have a mate mark.” I laugh at him as we reach the Pack house, I can hear the laughter and music floating through the doors and windows.

“Sorry I’ve been busy with the whole being kept prisoner thing.” Fraction slaps me on the top of my arm.

“Sounds like an excuse to me.” He ducks as I go to playfully slap him on the side of the head, we run into the house laughing like two pups playing a game,

8941%

Search the (website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 160

Mate me. Search the (website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

«Bellamy»

At first I’m confused, I don’t know what woke me up and the darkness is confusing to my brain.. Sitting up in bed I look around the dark room and then when I see him, shoulders slumped, head bowed and the smell of whiskey clinging to him.

“James?” I say into the darkness while rubbing my eyes.

“Didn’t mean to wake you.” He says with a slight slur to his voice, “was going to get in bed but didn’t know if that was okay.”

“Of course it is,” I tell him, folding half of the covers back, “come to bed.”

“Can’t.” James seems to slump more in on himself, “can’t sleep. The dreams will come.” Moving the duvet I knee walk so I’m just behind him, carefully I place my hand on his shoulder. Thankfully he doesn’t flinch from my touch like he did not so long ago.

“I get them too.” I tell him as I place a k*ss between his shoulder blades.

We've only been home a few days but I constantly find myself panicking that there are people going to grab me. I swear yesterday I thought one of the guys ordering a beer was going to pull a gun from his pocket. Nights are the worst though, from the second I close my eyes it's like I can feel the room closing in on me. I can feel the bag on my head as the gun is held between my shoulder blades. I can't explain the panic I feel to Doctor Lee, he won't understand it, the only other person who will, is sitting at the end of my bed having a full

0.00%

08:17

Mate me

289 (Vouchers

breakdown.

"It's all wrong," James runs his hand through his hair. "I was going to come back and tell Momma Beth all about you and now she's gone." I've never lost anyone close to me so I don't even know how to try and soothe his pain. "Tomorrow I have to drive that pup to a bus station and let her loose in the human world. I know what she did was awful but letting her go, Putting her out in the world without a Pack," James shakes his head. "It's not a call Beth would have ever made, he's making a mistake but he's too blinded to see it."

"Maybe he thinks it's the right thing," I shift my legs so I'm sitting on the end of the bed as well. "She did so much damage, whether a pup or not, she needs to understand that." James just huffs at me, "of course he's blinded. His Beta and best friend has been gone, the man has been without his right arm for a long time." James looks at me sideways and I can see the sadness flooding his eyes, "on top of that he lost his mother. It's alright for him to be lost, it's your job to make sure he doesn't stay that way."

"I don't know how, Zeus keeps telling me the same thing over and over again but I don't understand how it's meant to help any of us." James rubs his hands over his face before standing from the bed, he wobbles a little before getting himself straight.

"What does he say?" Our wolves are always more in tune with what's going on around us, it's what we do with it that matters. James just looks at me before dropping his head and shaking it violently from side to side.

"It doesn't matter, can't do it." I get off the bed and put a hand on either of his shoulders making him look me directly in the eye.

"What does he say?" I ask again.

20.10%

o

08:17

<

Mate me

288 Vouchers

“Mate him.” I lick my lips as the words send goose bumps down my spine, taking a step back from him I drop myself back onto the bed.

“How will that help?” It’s not that I don’t want to be his mate. I just don’t want him to do it out of some kind of obligation to his wolf.

“I don’t know. I just know that all I want is to climb into that bed and hold you. I want you to be there when I wake from a nightmare, I want you to be the first person I see in the morning and the last at night.” James stops speaking to look at me but when I don’t say anything he continues, “I hate the way you laugh at jokes that aren’t funny. The fact that you have four different smiles but only one you use on me, which infuriates me, because I never know what the hell you’re thinking. Your smell makes me want to climb inside you and never leave,” I suck

in a breath as I realise what he’s saying.

“You love me.” James stops pacing and looks at me.

“I didn’t say that.” He tilts his head to the side like he’s trying to understand me.

“Well, I love you,” I tell him truthfully.

“You don’t know enough about me to love me.” I stand from the bed and grab him by the hand, I hold it over my heart so he feels how steady it beats.

“I love your fierce loyalty, even when you’re pissed at Fraction you still stand by him no matter what. I love that even though that pup stole your Alpha’s daughter and got your mother killed you still wish there was a way for her to stay with a Pack.” I smile at him as tears start to fall from his eyes, “I love how even now, when your wolf is telling you what to do you are fighting it because you think it’s the right thing to do. There are so many things I love about you James and I can spend the rest of our lives listing them.” I let his hand go and grip his face in

44.49%

08:17

|||

O

<

Mate me

288 /Vouchers

both of mine, "I want to grow old with you. I want to shout at the kids for being too noisy while we try to sleep in on a Sunday. I want Ru and Zeus to run free like pups and fight side by side like warriors." I lean in and gently place a k*ss on his l*ps, "I want to make love to you over and over again, because baby, one time was not enough."

For the longest time he just stands there looking at me, for a second I think he's going to reject me but instead he just smiles at me before grabbing me by the hips and launching me onto the bed. I'm not ashamed to say a squeal leaves my l*ps as I land on the plush surface.

"Wasn't enough for me either." He tells me as he pulls his shirt over his head and lets it drop to the floor, "once will never be enough. You realise there will be people who won't accept us?" I just nod my head as he pops the button on his jeans leaving it open to show that delicious arrow leading to his c ock. "After I do this, we can't stay at the bar. I know you love this bar but I need to be in the Pack house, can you handle that?" I nod my head at him as he puts his hands on either side of his jeans, he doesn't push them down though. He just tilts his head to the side and raises an eyebrow.

"I can," I clear my throat as my voice comes out all raspy. "I can handle that."

"There is no taking this back, I won't ever allow you to reject this. We are forever or we aren't at all." All I can do is nod as he drops his jeans and shows all nine and half inches of his hardness. He grabs himself in his hand and slowly starts working his hand up and down, as he walks towards the bed. "I think you're wearing far too many clothes, mate." Lifting my hips I pull my pajama bottoms off faster than I ever have, thankfully that's all I wore to bed tonight. My co ck slaps against my stomach making an obscenely wet sound, James puts a knee on the

bed.

"You sure?" He asks me, I can see Zeus in his eyes as he places a hand

70.03%

|||

O

08:17

Mate me

on my leg and pushes it out slightly.

“Mate me.” I whisper, closing my eyes as he places a k*ss on my stomach just above my co ck. “Please, James.”

97.91%

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 161

Oh, and Eva?

«Eva»

The sounds of metal on metal has me sitting up in my little bed, I’ve been down here since Cas brought me back. I don’t really know what happened, I woke up as Cas was driving down the highway, he told me I had done well and I remember I beamed with pride at his praise.

“Let’s go, Eva.” James is standing at the entrance of my cell, the last time I saw him he was buck n*ked. Now he’s wearing jeans, a plain black t-shirt and heavy boots.

“Where am I going?” I ask him without moving from my spot on the bed.

“Alpha Fraction wants to see you, can’t keep you down here forever.” I look at the wall remembering the other woman down here.

“What about her?” I ask, nodding my head in the direction the voice came from.

“I’d be worried about you, pup.” I gulp loudly before standing from the bed, I’m still in the joggers and t-shirt I wore in the forest. James scrunches up his nose when I walk past him, I guess I smell a little ripe.

“I’m sorry you know,” I tell James as he closes my cell, “that day in the mating room. I was only doing what I was told, I’m sorry I put you in that situation.” James just nods at me, he doesn’t walk ahead of me, instead he waits for me to start walking before walking behind me.

Once we are in the basement my stomach starts to growl as the smell of

0.00%

14:13

|||

O

<

Oh, and Eva?

288 Vouchers

roasted meat and various vegetables reach my nose. I guess it’s lunch time in the Pack house, James gives me a little nudge on the shoulder so I keep walking up the stairs to the sound of voices. The second the door to the basement opens the kitchen goes so silent that I can actually hear the water bubbling in the pan on the stove. I keep my eyes on the floor as I quickly shuffle through the kitchen in the direction of Fraction’s office.

“Ladies.” James says following behind me, I don’t hear anyone say anything in response so I guess they are all just staring at me. I can feel their eyes on my back like daggers poking at my skin.

“They hate me.” I say rubbing at my face as I walk along the hall, I’m trying really hard not to cry. I understand their anger but it doesn’t make it any easier, stopping at the office door I keep my eyes on the floor.

“Eva, look at me.” I refuse to meet James’ eyes and instead stare at his heavily worn black boots, “fine. You stole their Alpha and Luna’s pup, in the process Momma Beth was killed. They don’t hate you, they are angry at you, those kinds of things don’t just get forgiven just because you’re a pup.” James reaches around me and opens the door to the office, “now buck up.” I flick my eyes up to him and see a small smile on his lips, it’s only now in the light of the hall that I notice the fresh bite mark on his neck. I feel my eyebrows draw together as I walk into the office, is the Pack under attack again?

Fraction is busy looking through a stack of yellow papers when I get into the office. He looks better than he did the last time I saw him but he has this sadness hanging around him that I can only associate with death, it's like a blanket he's cloaking himself in. James closes the office door and Fraction doesn't even look up, too engrossed in what he's reading. James nudges my shoulder and I go to take a seat in one of the two available chairs, the room is silent except for the shuffling of papers and the off puff of annoyance Fraction lets out.

17.50%

|||

O

Γ

14:13

Oh, and Eva?

288 Nouchers

"This is for you." Fraction holds out an envelope and once I realise he means me I lean over the desk and take it from him with a shaky hand. When I don't open it Fraction puts down the papers before looking at me, "open it Eva." I flick my eyes to the side and see James sitting in the other other chair with a small smile on his lips while he looks at Fraction. I can't stop my hand from shaking as I slowly peel the envelope open, inside there is a small stack of papers, a little plastic card with some numbers on it and a key.

"What is this Alpha?" I ask, my voice sounds so small even to me.

"That is paperwork for an apartment that has been rented in your name. The lease is paid for three months, the key is to the apartment." I can't stop my eyes from widening, why would he get me an apartment unless he planned on letting me go. It's not a thought I have even entertained, "the card is for the bank account I paid all of your babysitting money into. You amassed a decent amount, not a lot though. You will need to get a job as soon as you can." I expect Fraction to say more but instead he just picks up the yellow papers and starts flicking through them again.

"Thank you." I say while standing from the chair, clearly I've been dismissed and I'm not going to question getting out of here alive.

"Eva." I stop moving and wait for the hammer to drop, "you will never be allowed back in Swiftmane." Fraction's voice leaves goosebumps down my back, he sounds like every bit the Alpha that he is. "You are effectively banished from this Pack, if another Pack takes you in you must disclose what you did. If I find out you didn't, then I will." He's not

banishing me from all Packs but he's making sure no one will ever take me in, I feel my shoulders drop as the reality of my situation sets in. "As a female my advice to you is to find yourself a nice little place to stay, get a job and live a normal apple pie life." I don't say anything, I just keep my head down and walk out of the office.

44.58%

14:13 Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

O

<

Oh, and Eval

288 Vouchers

As soon as I am in the hall my tears start to stream down my face, I've been kept from my wolf my whole life and now I can't even explore my wolf.

"Come on, I'll take you to the bus station." James puts a hand on my shoulder and puts a small amount of pressure on it so that I have no choice but to leave. I don't pay attention to anyone as we leave the Pack house, I just keep my head down until I am sitting in James' car. "Here." James passes me a tissue and I use it to wipe at my face and nose, "you realise he only banished you from Swiftmane. There are tons of other Packs out there." James is talking to me like I'm a wounded animal.

"And who will want to take me in?" I ask after what feels like an age, James doesn't answer me as he tightens his hands on the steering wheel.

"You never know what life holds for you Eva. You're young and have so much of your life ahead of you." We haven't been driving long before James pulls into a parking lot, he turns the car off before turning sideways to look at me. "You f ucked up but that doesn't have to define who you are. I saw what those," he pauses like he's searching for the right word. "Those monsters did in that place, I can only imagine the things that happened to you. Were you punished for not getting me to mate with you?" I rub at my shoulder feeling the scars along my back with my finger tips, "I assumed as much. Out here in the real world, you don't get punished for such little things. Stick to the human laws and ours and you will be fine."

"Do we have laws?" I ask him, I had no idea.

"Only the one big one," James smiles before reaching over and opening my door for me. "Don't ever tell a human about us or what we are."

"Thank you James." I get out of the car and just before I close the door

71.40%

|||

o

14.14

Oh, and Eva?

288 Vouchers

I look James directly in the eye, “I really am sorry about everything. I never meant for anyone to get hurt, especially not Beth.” James just looks at me for a minute before nodding his head.

“I know you didn’t.” It’s as close to forgiveness that I’m going to receive so I close the door and stand there watching his car drive away leaving me alone in the bus station.

95.06%

Search the **Find_** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 162

Connections.

It’s pretty early so I actually have the kitchen to myself, the pups are still in bed and I can hear James walking around in the room above me. Since getting the pups back I’ve been insisting that the Pack gets back to normal, I didn’t want Aurora coming home to a completely different home. It is different though, I can’t help but remember the many mornings I stood in this exact spot waiting for the coffee machine to finish brewing. The big difference being that I never used to be alone, momma Beth was always either at the table waiting for her own coffee or pottering away in the kitchen sorting one thing or another. The beep of the machine pulls me out of my memories and I quickly pour two cups of dark Colombian roast. I doctor mine with creamer and sugar but I leave Fraction’s as is. He didn’t come to bed again last night so I know he will need it.

Just as I turn to leave the kitchen with both cups in my hands the back door opens and a rather wet looking Bellamy comes walking in.

“Oh.” He stops looking at me with wide eyes, I guess he didn’t expect to see anyone in here. “Morning, Luna.”

“Bellamy, if you live in this home you will call me Anna, none of this Luna stuff.” I tell him with a smile as I lift my cup up to my nose inhaling the smell, “there’s still a cup in the machine if you want it.” Bellamy just nods at me as he wipes at his bare charts, judging by the jeans and no shoes I gather he just got back from shifting.

“Was on patrol,” Bellamy tells me, walking over to the coffee machine, his tone makes it sound like he has to justify himself to me. I put the coffee cups on the counter and wait until he’s finished making his coffee.

0.00%

14:14

|||

O

<

Connections.

288 Vouchers

“Remind me to get more creamer if two of us use it.” I say with a smile as he doctor’s his coffee.

“Oh, da mn it.” He quickly puts the creamer down and looks at me with a sad face, “I didn’t even think, please forgive me. I’ll replace it.”

“Bellamy.” I walk over to him and pick the creamer back up, pouring one into his coffee, “this is your home now. If you want creamer then use the creamer, I’m just used to being the only one who uses it.” I hold out the coffee to him once I’m done and try to give him a reassuring smile.

“This is all new to me, the patrols, having a mate, living with Alpha and Luna.” Bellamy takes the coffee from me before walking to sit at the kitchen table, “what if I mess this all up and he doesn’t want me anymore.” I walk over to the cups I left on the side and pick them back

up.

“You know the one thing I’ve learnt about The Swiftmane lads?” Bellamy shakes his head, “they love fearlessly and sometimes to a fault. If you don’t want to patrol then don’t, we have enough warriors and I’m sure we can fill your spot.” Bellamy just looks at me as I tell him he doesn’t have to do something he’s been asked to do. “That nice new mate mark on your n*eck shows that James knows exactly what he has done and you aren’t going anywhere, as for living with an Alpha and Luna? Well your going to have to figure that one out yourself.”

“Little wolf, is that for me?” I look to the door and give Fraction a wide smile, he looks exhausted but his face still has a beaming smile on it. How the man can look good in yellow flannel pajama bottoms is beyond me. I hold out the coffee and he takes it after leaving a peck on my cheek, “she’s right you know. If you don’t want to patrol you don’t have to. It’s not for everyone.” Fraction tells Bellamy while sipping at his coffee, “I need you in my office.” Fraction whispers in my ear before leaving the kitchen.

26.02%

O

14:14

Connections

18 288 Vouchers

“If you figure out the; how to live with an Alpha thing. Give me a shout. I could use the pointers.” Bellamy’s laugh follows me out of the kitchen as I quickly hurry after Fraction.

Entering the office I’m sort of disappointed to see Fraction sitting behind the desk, I sort of hoped he had something different in mind.

“Take a look at this.” Fraction holds out a yellow piece of paper to me, I take it while popping my coffee on his desk.

“What is this?” I ask him sitting in the chair and curling my legs beneath me.

“It’s like a birth certificate, everyone gets one when they join a Pack. That one is Theo’s.” I look down the paper and see it dated the day he was born, it has everything from his designation to his eye colour.

“I don’t know what I’m meant to be looking at.” I tell him truthfully, looking up at him I see him drinking his coffee with a smile. He closes his eyes for a second like he’s savoring the flavor.

“Look at the bottom of the page, the witnesses to his acceptance to the Pack.” I do as Fraction says and see an Alpha and two witness signatures. “Is this your father?” I run my finger over the faded name, it’s almost unreadable it’s so smooshed together.

“Yeah it is but look at the witness names,” Fraction leans across the desk like he’s desperate for me to understand it.

“Elizabeth Jacobs.” I say reading the name next to the mother’s signature, “who is that?” I gasp when it comes to me, “wait you think it’s Mrs Jacobs?”

‘I know it is, think about it Anna. It all fits, someone who lost a granddaughter because of us, someone who would hate us because we destroyed her family.’ Fraction counts the reasons off on his fingers, [SEARCH THE FINDNOVEL.NET](http://SEARCHTHEFINDNOVEL.NET) website on GøøGLE to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

55.06%

|||

<

1414

288 Maher

“the woman has countless reasons to hate us and want to see us ruined.”

“You think that ga y hating old lady called The Shalamayne on us?” I have to admit it fits, “how did we not know they were related?”

“I never had a reason to look, she’s been here longer than I have and so has Theo.” Fraction waves three more pieces of paper at me, “I’m on two of these which are Faye and Simon.”

“So what do we do now?” I ask him while putting the certificate back on the table. “not like we can kill an old lady.” Fraction runs his hands through his hair.

“What should we do then? She could keep calling them, we need to know how she’s connected to them. If she’s done this to us she could do it to any Pack so it’s not like I can banish her.” I nod my head at him, I agree but I also disagree. This woman has been pulling strings behind our backs for longer than we have realised.

“We need to find out what she knows but we can’t banish her. For a woman of her age it would be as good as killing her,” Fraction looks grim as I tell him this.

“Then what do you suggest?” I just shrug my shoulders as I lean back in my chair, staring at the wall. I try to come up with an alternative that doesn’t mean another person is dead because of The Shalamayne.

80.77%

|||

14 14

O

Search the (website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 163

Cleaning House. Search the Find novel.net website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

«Fraction)

‘Go and get Mrs Jacobs and bring her to the office.’ I tell Rick over the Pack link before switching to James.

‘Come to the office, something is happening.’ I quickly tell James. Standing from the desk I walk through the office, I can feel Anna’s eyes on me but I don’t tell her what I’m planning. I need Elder Thomas to agree first. Opening the office door I see the warrior standing guard at the end of the hall.

“Sam?” The young man turns around and I see it is Sam, “go and find Elder Thomas and tell him to come here now.” Sam doesn’t answer, he just quickly runs along the hall and up the stairs like the dutiful

warrior.

“What are you doing?” Anna asks me as I close the office door, I quickly walk back over to my desk chair and sit down.

“Rick is going to get Mrs Jacobs now and James is on his way down with Elder Thomas. If you don’t want her dead I want her out of the way, away from anyone else she can hurt.” Anna smiles at me, I get the impression she’s happy I’m not about to take another life. I have to admit that killing an old lady is not high on my list of things to do.

“You’re going to send her away with Elder Thomas aren’t you?” Anna asks me, understanding what I’m planning.

“She knows about The Shalamayne, enough that she was able to call them. Maybe Elder Thomas can use her to get more information on them, to help other Packs.” A knock at the door tells me at least one of

0.00%

|||

14.14 0

Cleaning House

288 Wouchwy

our guests is here, “Enter.” James and Elder Thomas walk into the room, James is still in his sleep clothes and Elder Thomas looks like he is about to head out.

“You wanted us?” James asks, rubbing a hand along the back of his neck.

“Mrs Jacobs is the person who called The Shalamayne.” Elder Thomas doesn’t look shocked but James curses before dropping into the last

vacant seat.

“That ba tty old lady?” I nod at James before looking at Elder Thomas.

“I thought maybe you and the Elders could use her to get more information? Save me killing an elderly woman?” Elder Thomas doesn’t even pause; he just nods his head.

“It could definitely give us an insight, she had enough information to be able to call them so she must know something.” I’m glad he agreed because I didn’t have a second plan.

“So what?” Anna asks, looking from her grandfather and then to me, “you just keep her locked up until she dies?”

“What else do you suggest?” I don’t get to hear her answer as another knock sounds on the door, “enter.” I shout for the second time.

The door opens to reveal Rick dressed in jeans and a button down shirt, next to him is a grey haired old lady, she's wearing a knee length skirt and a soft looking chequered wrap around her top half. Her glasses are perched on the edge of her nose, the second she sees James she looks like she just stepped in something very unpleasant.

"Elizabeth." I say as Rick closes the door.

"Well, I never. It's Mrs Jacobs to you, have some respect for your

23.09%

1414

Cheating House

18 285chers

elders." I press my lips together to stop myself laughing, this tiny woman shouting at me about respect is kind of funny.

"Do you know why you're here?" I ask her as she looks at the people sitting quietly in the room.

"Of course I don't, your goon came and dragged me from my home. The sun is not even up yet, a woman of my age has a certain routine to be followed." Mrs Jacobs actually sounds really annoyed that we have disturbed her morning.

"She was loading a suitcase into her car when I got there." Rick says while leaning against the closed door.

"Is leaving on vacation a crime?" She asks in a shrill voice.

"Only if you don't tell your Alpha before hand." James says from his spot in the chair, I notice he doesn't look at Mrs Jacobs and his jaw seems tight like he's trying to bite back what he really wants to say.

"I didn't ask you," Mrs Jacobs spits at him. I slam my hands on the desk at the same time James jumps to his feet.

"Enough! James, sit down." I wait for James to decide to sit down before I continue, "you are here because you called The Shalamayne on the Pack. You are the reason they came here and everything that has happened since."

For a while no one says anything and Mrs Jacobs just holds my eyes before she throws her hands in the air.

“Well, it took you long enough. What gave me away?” I wave the certificate and her eyes narrow, “really? That old thing. Wow, I could have sworn when I knocked over your pup or sent my Faye after you that would be it but not some paper forgotten by time.”

47.15%

14 14

Cleaning Housi

1200 Mouchers

“Wait, you ran over Thomas?” I’m out of my chair and grabbing Anna round the waist in the blink of an eye. Anna moved so quickly she actually almost had Mrs Jacobs in her hands. “Why would you do that?” Anna screams.

“This was never meant to be your Pack.” Mrs Jacobs spits at Anna, suddenly she looks much younger than she did a second ago. “This Pack was always meant to be my husbands, handed down to my son. It was our Legacy not some filthy Omega’s who dilutes the blood line.”

“I think we’ve heard enough.” Rick says, grabbing Mrs Jacobs by the arm.

“Get off me.” She shakes his hand off and points her finger at Anna, “you think they are done? That this is over?” She laughs wildly as James and Rick crowd around her, anyone else would be frightened by now but not this woman. “They might be done with you for now but they have their eyes on the American Pack’s. No one is safe, you will all learn the price of deals made.” I nod at Elder Thomas and Rick and they both move in taking an arm each.

“Elizabeth Jacobs, you are hereby remanded to the custody of the Elder Council. There you will stay until the day of your death,” Elder Thomas says loudly over her shrieking.

“You can’t do this!” She screams as Rick and Elder Thomas drag her from the office, “this is my Pack, our Pack! You can’t just take it from us.”

Once we can no longer hear her screaming James drops himself back in the chair as Anna loses the strength in her legs and crumbles to the floor. I follow her down cradling her head against my chest, I slowly rock back and forth while brushing at her hair.

“It was all her. She did all of this,” Anna sobbing against my chest, I have

71.83%

14:14

Cleaning House

288 Vouchers

no words of comfort to give her so I just keep stroking her hair making shushing sounds.

98.55%

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 164

Family.

«Anna)

For the first time in a long time I actually feel safe within the Pack, I can't remember the last time I took Thomas to the park or laid around while Aurora jumped all over Winter. Today I woke up in a good mood so I put coats on Thomas, Aurora and Huston and packed them all along to the park. We think Hysion is about five years old but he's rather tall so Thomas's clothes have been fitting him for now. Watching them play they look like any other group of siblings. Hysion has this way of making sure Aurora is never left out of their games and since we brought him home Thomas seems to have forgotten all about Anders. He and Hysion are joined at the hip, I actually dread the day I have to break them apart.

"What's this? A Luna out in the wild with us peasants?" I turn on the bench and see a rather large Eliza waddling across the grass with Lizzie running ahead of her. Lizzie is so excited to see her friends she doesn't even acknowledge me as she runs to join them on the climbing frame.

"You look better and bigger." I tell her as she sits next to me.

"I swear I get bigger everyday." Eliza huffs as she pats her now very round stomach.

"How long until the little lady joins us?" I reach my hand over and feel for the baby kicking, apparently today is not my lucky day because no pup kicks for me.

“Just under four months if she comes in time, I swear I feel fifty years pregnant.” I smile at her, she might be complaining but she has a

0.00%

O

14:15

Family

285 Vouchers

stu pid beaming grin on her face.

“You’re loving every second.” I tell her while turning to eye the pups.

“Da mn right I am.” I laugh as Hysion picks up Aurora attempting to spin her around.
“Any luck on finding his family?”

“No, Fraction is asking around all the Packs but so far no one knows of a missing pup. He could be from another country but that’s a

connection we don’t have.” I rub at the spot over my heart as I think of Hysion leaving us.

“And he can’t remember anything?” Eliza is asking all the questions we have already asked ourselves.

“No, he can’t remember being anywhere but The Shalamayne. He’s so little Eliza, how can someone not be missing him?” It confuses me how someone is not looking for this sweet little boy, “he’s clearly been raised with manners, he has so much care and time for Aurora.”

“That’s not always nurture sometimes it can be nature, maybe he was born at The Shalamayne?” It’s something me and Fraction had considered but that would be way too sad for the little angel we’ve come to know.

I feel the need to change the subject, knowing Hysion leaving us will happen eventually I’m choosing not to think of it until I need to.

“How are you anyway?” I turn so I’m sitting sideways on the bench, “you been going to your check ups after everything?” Eliza got pretty beat up while we were saving everyone and I was concerned when I saw her all battered.

“I’m fine, I told you it looked way worse than it was. He got a lucky punch on my nose but otherwise he didn’t touch me.” Eliza rubs her stomach, “something about a baby bump makes even human men stop.”

23.04%

111

14150

Family

289 Vouchers

It could have gone so much worse for Eliza and I never would have forgiven myself if the worst happened.

“I’m sorry we asked you to do that, I don’t know what I would have done if the new one had been hurt.” I place my hand on her stomach as I offer her a long overdue apology.

“We got James and Bellamy back and of course Aurora.” Eliza puts her hand over mine and looks me directly in the eye, “it was completely worth it, I have zero regrets and don’t forget I offered to help. No one forced my hand.”

“Do

you think it will stop now?” Eliza raises her eyebrow at me, “all the crazy? I feel like I’ve had enough for a lifetime. I’m ready to just be, to just have a normal life with my family and Pack.” I can’t keep the hopefulness out of my voice.

“I think Fraction gave anyone planning anything a clear warning, there isn’t anything that man won’t do for his Pack and family.” She’s not wrong, he killed a human for us which could put him in danger with the human law enforcement if anyone ever found out.

“Momma, we’re hungry.” Thomas shouts from the top of the climbing frame. I stand from the bench and wave at them all to come down.

“Are you and Lizzie going to join us? We are having a garden picnic.” I ask Eliza as I hold my hand out to her and help her from the bench, at a certain point moving on your own just becomes difficult.

“Throw in some ice water and you have a deal.” I laugh at her as the kids run ahead of us, they have no fears within the Pack border. And just like Elder Thomas said Aurora seems much better after his night time visit, I can still see some of the fear within her but the nightmares have stopped and she’s stopped clinging to me every time I leave

the room. My phone ringing pulls me out of my thoughts, I dig it out of my jeans and see it's Cas.

48.07%

||1 SEARCH on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

14:15

Family

280 Vouchers

"Hello?" I don't remember giving Cas my number let alone programming it into my phone.

"Hi, Luna Anna. Sorry to bother you but I was wondering if you could ask Fraction to call me, it's kind of urgent and I can't reach him." Cas sounds off, his words are slurring a little.

"Erm, yeah. I think he's on patrol at the moment, I'll get him to call you as soon as he's home." I tell Cas, he's quiet for so long that I pulling the phone from my face and look at the screen ensuring the call hasn't dropped. "What's happened Cas?"

"It's nothing, just have him call me please." The line disconnects and I pocket my phone.

"Everything ok?" Eliza asks me.

"I don't know, let's get home and feed the pups." I put a fake smile on my face as I mentally run through all the new things that could be going wrong.

Surely Swiftmane Pack is due a break for a while, I feel emotionally done and drained. It takes everything I have to keep my smile in place while me and Eliza entertain the pups through lunch. It isn't until Aurora is being put down for a nap and the boys and Lizzie start watching cartoons that Fraction and Patrick come back to the Pack house.

"What is it, little wolf?" I'm not shocked he can see past my fake smile at this point.

"Cas called, he said it's urgent and he needs to speak with you." I lean in close to him so the people around us don't hear me, "he sounded pretty drunk and on edge."

"I'll call him now, bring me a coffee?" Fraction k*sses me on the

76.15%

|||

14.15

Family

forehead and I nod before heading off to the kitchen.

11

288 Vouchers

99.16%

Search the **Find_** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 165

Young Alpha.

«Fraction

I grumble as Cas's phone line rings out for the second time, I don't know what's wrong with him but I can take a guess. His father is pretty sick, some form of bowel cancer, if I had to guess his time has come and Cas is doing the needed Alpha tour. I can't imagine why he would be upset though, in all my years I've never seen an Alpha Heir treated the way Cas has been. I only ever met Alpha Steven once but it was enough for me not to want to go back to the Everfur Pack, Alpha Steven was raised on the human religions so he led his Pack with the same convictions. When Cas was born we all thought this would mellow the Alpha out a bit but instead he saw Cas as someone to overthrow him and he treated him like the enemy. To give Cas his due he stuck it out until he was eighteen and then left until coming back just over a year ago when his father started getting sick.

"Fraction." I lift my head up when I see Rick and James standing in the office doorway with grim expressions.

"Goddess, what now?" They both walk in closing the door behind them, James hands me a coffee as Rick sits in the chair opposite my desk.

"I just got news that Eva never made it to New York, the apartment hasn't been claimed." I curse loudly as I pull up my emails on my laptop, seeing no new emails from any Alpha's I breath out a sigh of relief. My first thought was The Shalamayne and them starting up again, it's highly unlikely if only Eva is missing though.

"Do we know where she is?" I ask James, he nods, pulling out a notepad and flicking a few pages.

0.00%

|||

14:15 Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Young Alpha

288 Vouchers

"Looks like she boarded a bus to Seattle instead, maybe she decided to go her own way?" I feel my eyebrows draw together as James tells me

this.

"Why would she go somewhere when I set up a home for her? It makes no sense." Suddenly I'm realising why Cas is trying to get hold of me, I let her go and it was my responsibility to get her to where we agreed. "Cas is going to be pis sed."

"Why would Cas care?" Rick asks, I just raise an eyebrow at him and it takes Rick a moment but I finally see the realisation hit him. "Sh it."

"Yeah, it's messy." I confirm exactly what Rick is thinking.

"He could reject her? Problem solved right?" I'm shaking my head

before he's done.

"No way. Cas won't do that, she needs help and protection. He will see this as his own personal job, you know how he was raised. He will want to shelter her." James is nodding his head, he was with me when I went to Everfur Pack, he knows how Cas was treated.

"Want me to try calling him?" I shake my head no at James.

"You guys cover patrols and what not and I'll keep trying." I pick up my phone pressing Ca s's number before they have even closed the office door behind them.

Cas might be young but he's built like a damn bull, thanks to his father he did nothing but train to be better, faster and stronger. He needed a way to protect himself against the abuse and at some point it clicked for him that he was his only protection. Other Alpha's tried to interfere but it never ended well for either party, I remember Darryl taking Cas for a week and when Alpha Steven caught up to them Cas could barely walk after. We stopped trying after that for fear he would kill his son, we all loved in hope that Cas would grow up to be a better Alpha than

21.42%

14:15

Young Alpha

289 Vouchers

his father.

"Fraction?" Cas's words are slurred as the phone is finally answered.

"You're drunk lad," I point out the obvious and I swear I can hear this eyes roll.

"He died this morning, he's gone. I'm free." Cas's words are whispered like he's worried someone will overhear his joy at his father's passing.

"You need me to come swear you in?" I don't offer an apology, I'm not sorry that Alpha is dead and I won't pretend to be.

"Darryl is coming," Cas hiccups as I hear glass meeting glass telling me he's pouring another drink. Of course Darryl is coming to swear him in as Alpha, Darryl has been like a father for Cas for a long time now. "She's not at the apartment."

"So I've been told, James said she got a bus to Seattle." There's no point in hiding anything from him, he will only find out himself eventually.

"She's running from me." I can hear the sadness in Cas's voice.

"She doesn't know enough to run, you smelt her yourself. Her wolf is so buried she might as well be human." I remind Cas.

"What if I lose her? You said I had to wait, you said to let her grow and stay back. I stayed back, I left when I wanted to come back to Swiftmane." I hear gulping and then more glass clinking, "you promised me you would set her up."

"I gave her everything I could without handing her a free pass for everything she did. If she chose not to take it that's on her." I won't apologise for not ensuring she arrived in New York, people can only be given options, it's up to them what they do with it.

44.92%

|||

14.151

Young Alpha

288 Vouchers

"What if I never find her? What if she's gone? My wolf is going crazy, he won't calm down." I know the feeling he's talking about, it was the same one I had when Anna first came to us and was taken from my kitchen while I was out running in the trees.

"Trust me Cas, these things have a way of working themselves out. One day you will turn around and she will be there." I remember how I found Anna in a field in a rundown Pack all those years ago, it was the last place I thought I would find my mate.

"You make it sound like it's all planned out." Cas sounds so depressed that I can't help but think he's sinking into the same darkness I've been in a few times myself.

"It's not going to be easy but it will work out Cas." I try to be as upbeat as I can but even I can admit that when your mate has been raised in a cult and taught to hate everything about herself it's kind of difficult to see a time she would want to be with a shifter. Cas doesn't say anything else as the phone line is disconnected, I don't know what more he could have said in the state he's in to be honest.

"Everything okay?" I smile as Anna sticks her head around the office door.

"Perfect little wolf. Come here," I hold out my hand to her and she skips into the office, closing the door behind her. Once she's in my grasp and I pull her onto my lap so we are front to front, her legs squeeze in next to mine and she holds herself over my legs. "I love you little wolf." After my phone conversation with Cas I just need her to know how loved she is. Leaning forward I lay a kiss on her neck and her head falls back as a moan leaves her lips.

"If you love me, could I ask for something?" I smile against her neck, this woman will never understand that she can have anything I'm capable of giving her.

65.44%

14:15

Young Alpha

1288 Nouchers

“Name it.” I have a feeling I know what she wants and I can feel my cock swell at the idea.

“I want Hysion to stay here with us. Just like Momma Beth kept James, I want him to be ours.” I lean back from her and stare directly into her blue eyes, that one I wasn’t expecting.

“I thought...” I shake my head before putting a smile on my face, “if we don’t find his family then yeah, little wolf. We can make Hysion family, that will make three kids mind you.” I’m reminding her of when Elder Thomas told us we would only have three children.

“And I wouldn’t change them for the world, he’s as much mine as Thomas and Aurora. He needs us,” I can’t help myself anymore, I pull her into me and slam my mouth onto hers, this woman will never stop amazing me.

89.73%

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 166

Now.

(Eliza>>

“Four months later)

A sudden pain in my side wakes me up, I’m alone in the bed thanks to the new patrol schedule. At first I just lay there and see if the pain happens again, when it doesn’t I try to roll over so I can go back to sleep. The problem is I’m as big as a bus right now so I’m sort of turtled in the bed, I cry out in pain when a small stabbing sensation starts in my lower back.

'Rick?' I scream over the Pack link, 'somethings wrong!' I know I sound panicked but right now I'm scared.

'Hold tight, kitten. I'm coming now.' Ever since Aurora and Momma Beth no one patrols alone any more so Rick doesn't have to worry about abandoning his post. With a few rocks to the side I manage to finally get myself into a sitting position, using my hand on the bedside table I get myself standing up and a gush of wetness runs down my legs.

'Rick, it's the pup. She's coming.' I put a hand on my lower stomach as I feel this pressure deep down in my stomach.

'I'm almost there, kitten. Don't move, I'm coming.' I'm too worried to listen so I start to slowly shuffle my way across the bedroom and into the hall. When I reach the stairs I double over in pain as the worst contraction yet hits me. I'm no expert but I don't think it's meant to happen this quickly.

Headlights shining through the windows lets me know someone is

0.00%

111

O

08.24

288 Vouchers

pulling up in front of the house.

"Eliza?" I hear Anna's worried voice shout up from the kitchen.

"I'm up here." I shout back. Fraction and Anna both come into view as they round the corner to the stairs. They both look like they have just been woken up because they are both in their pajamas.

"Cute cats." I tell Anna around a grimace, she has the most butt ugly cat pajamas I have ever seen.

"He pis sed me off." Anna tells Fraction pushing him on the shoulder, "go get her down the stairs. We need to get her to Doctor Lee." I'm shaking my head as Fraction runs up the stairs and scoops me up into his arms. It doesn't seem to bother him that I'm drenched in this weird sticky fluid, he acts like it's totally normal to scoop up a pregnant warrior and carry her down some stairs.

"I don't think we have time." I tell Anna as another contraction makes words hard, all I seem to be able to do is pant and moan in pain.

"Ok. put her on the floor over here." Anna walks over the sofa and moves the coffee table out of the way, "looks like we are having the pup here." Fraction carefully lays me down on the floor. I grab Anna's arm and pull her into me.

"We?" I shout at her only inches from her face. "There is no we." I moan around more pain. "there is just me and I am not having a pup in the middle of my lounge with no drugs! I need the drugs Anna!" By the end I'm screaming as I feel my lower body clench around the unfamiliar pain, "take me to the Doctor."

"I'm sorry sweetie it's too late." Anna is lifting my nightie and looking between my legs, "this pup is coming now whether you like it or not."

"I don't. I don't like it. I'm just going hold her in until we get to the

15.12%

III

r

08.24

Now

288 Your bes

medical centre!" I glance over at Fraction who looks very pale as he stands around the entrance to the lounge, "what are you looking at?" Fraction's eyes go wide, "go and find my useless mate and make him take me to the Doctor!" I've never in my life seen an Alpha move as quickly as Fraction does in that second, one moment he looks like a scared little boy and the next there might as well be a smoke outline of where he was standing.

Movement between my legs draws my attention to Anna who seems to be spreading my legs and looking directly at my centre.

"Anna, get from between my legs. Right now!" Anna places a hand on either of my knees and her bright blue eyes connect with mine.

"No can do, this pup is coming now. You're already crowning, on the next pain I need you to push." I'm shaking my head no as Anna nods. hers, "you need to. Eliza if you don't push this can go bad very quickly, so do as I say and push. Just a bit of pain and then you get to hold your beautiful new pup." Anna starts breathing in and out in really

fast paced breaths and I find myself matching her, I keep my eyes on hers as she nods her head at me. Once the pain starts again I grip the carpet below me in my fingers and grit my teeth, I tighten all of my core muscles trying to stop my b*dy from pushing my pup out.

“I need the drugs.” I tell Anna, actually I think I sort of scream it at her.

“No, you need to push. Push Eliza! Push!!” I scream as my b*dy betrays me and I feel myself baring down and pushing with everything I have, when the pain stops Anna puts her hand on my stomach. “Okay, breath for a second, the head is almost out. When the next pain comes I want you to give me one big push. Don’t squeeze just push.” Just as she said the next pain comes quickly and I push just like she told me to, I feel this weird tugging sensation and then Anna is laughing, “she’s got bright red hair.”

34.07%

|||

08:24

Now.

288 Vouchers

“She’s out?” I ask her panting for breath, I don’t think I can push again.

“Just the head,” honestly those are the worst three words I have ever heard, I can feel the tears rolling down my face mixing with the sweat collecting along my b*dy.

“I can’t, I can’t do this.” I cry out, I’ve never felt pain like this.

“You’ve got this kitten.” I didn’t hear Rick come in but he’s suddenly there holding my hand, he’s completely n*ked and I see Fraction and Doctor Lee standing behind him. “Do you want to jump in?” I ask the Doctor, my voice comes out really high pitched.

“Looks like Luna has it.” Doctor Lee says putting his bag on the coffee table, as a new contraction hits me. I start pushing without having to be told, I feel this weird friction and then it’s like a popping sensation just before the room is filled with the wailing of a small pup.

I’m so busy trying to see the small wailing creature that I don’t even register Doctor Lee pushing Anna out of the way to get between my legs. I see Anna wipe the pup’s face with a cloth before she passes her to me, I reach out to take her as Rick lifts my nightie up further leaving my chest bare to everyone. I lay her carefully on me letting my skin warm her. She’s so tiny, her head is filled with bright orange hair and her lungs are working overtime as she screams the place down.

“How is she Doc?” Rick asks as he looks down at the small bundle now settling against me.

“She’s good, our Luna did a great job. Try giving the pup a feed and then I’ll give her the once over.” I carefully lift the little orange bundle into my arms, careful to support her head. I bring my n*pple to her mouth and she latches on instantly suckling away like her life depends on it.

“This feels weird.” I say with a small laugh as I look up at Anna, “thank

55.36%

|||

O

08:24

Now

16285 Vouchers SEARCH THE website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

you.” Anna just smiles at me as she wipes at her pajamas, “I’d say sorry about the pjs but those things have to go.” Anna is covered in blood and all sorts of other stuff, there will be no saving them.

After a little fussing Doctor Lee checks out the pup and then wraps her in a blanket before handing her back to me. Rick helps me get onto the sofa and wraps me in a blanket, Fraction is still standing in the

doorway looking as pale as a ghost.

“You okay Alpha?” Fraction just nods at me but still looks like he’s trying not to vomit.

“So what are we calling the new addition?” Anna asks me as she leans down to stoke a finger across the pup’s face. I look at Rick and he just nods at me telling me to go ahead and tell them.

“I really wanted to honor the Pack,” I look at Fraction, “you guys saved me. You gave me my mate and now I have a family that I never thought I would have.” I can feel myself getting teary so I just look down at the little bundle in my arms.

“Eliza, you don’t have to thank us, you’re our family.” Anna tells me quickly, putting her hand over mine.

“With your permission I’d like to name her Bethany, a combination of the two strongest women I know.” I watch Anna suck in a breath as she looks at Fraction, it’s asking a lot naming my daughter after his mother. He seems to collect himself and walks over to us, leaning down he places a large hand against me and Bethany.

“I think she will have a lot to live up to and with that name, how can she fail.” I smile with joy as I realise he approves and isn’t banning me from using his mothers name.

“You don’t mind?” Rick asks Fraction, he must have been worried too. not that he’s said as much to me.

75.58%

08.24

“She meant a lot to all of us, she might have been my mother but she wasn’t just mine.” Fraction pulls Anna into him and k*sses the top of her head, “and anyway, we just made lysion an official member of Swiftmane.”

“That’s us done now, five makes us a family.” I beam at Anna as I realise she finally has the family she has always wanted, we might not be normal and we might have our ups and downs but somehow we got to where we are now.

Together we aren’t just a Pack, we’re family.

94.50%

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 167

His Rogue Omega.

88 Cas 88

88 One year after Eva is released \$8

“Where are you off to?” My mother asks me as I head for the front door, sighing loudly, I turn to look at her. Since my fathers passing she has really taken this whole single

female to the extreme, she's favoring short skirts and skin tight tops these days. If it shows legs or tits she has it on.

"Going to check this rogue situation out," I turn back to the door so I don't have to look at the cherry red lipstick smothered on her face anymore. "How about you leave the warriors alone while I'm gone?"

"When did you turn into such a pansy? Let the warriors deal with the rogue, an Alpha has more important things to do." I don't stay to listen to her berate me anymore, it's always the same. I'm less than I should be, I was raised to be strong and righteous and I shouldn't be doing jobs that are beneath me. The only thing that woman ever taught me was how to pour a decent gin while your mate beats your pup into submission.

A week ago I got a report of a rogue setting up in the next town over from the Pack. We are pretty close to a human town and we have good connections with them. Of course they have no idea what we are, they just think we're a bunch of closed off weirdos, they are good people though so I don't want a rogue coming in hurting them. Vince, my Beta told me he had scouted it out and it seemed to be one female rogue around eighteen years old and she had started work at the local strip club. Apparently she moved to town with her boyfriend, who's a human. A shifter with a human is enough of a concern but what really

0.00%

|||

08.241

His Rogue Omega.

288 Vouchers

had me jumping into my car tonight is that she will be eighteen this year. Surely there can't be that many rogue females out there, the only way for me to know is to check it out myself.

The human town is called Midsey, it's pretty small to be honest. A couple thousand people, they don't have any strip malls or factories but they do have coffee shops, cars and four different strip clubs. Most of the men work in the mines and most of the women either stay at home with the children or run the little corner shops selling tacky stuff no one wants. Midsey is the town where technology never quite made it, I'm pretty sure they are about fifteen years behind the rest of the world. This late at night the streets are empty and the shutters are down on the main street stores, my SUV sounds like a tank in the silence. Eventually I reach the end of the street and turning left I see the red neon lights to the strip club Vince told me about, Dragon's Flame. I can see two guys standing outside having a smoke while they chat to a skinny blonde woman who is

wearing a silk robe over a g-string and nothing more. Her heels put her at the same height as the guys and I have to admit she has some killer legs, tonight I'm here for something with a little bit more bite though.

Finding a spot to park my car I make quick work of locking it up before heading into the club, as soon as I cross the threshold I'm assaulted with the smell of whiskey, sweat and arousal. There is a red head dancing on the pole as I make my way through the crowd to the bar, finding a spot at the end I sit down and lean back into the

shadows.

"What can I get you?" The woman behind the bar is wearing tiny hotpants that seem to cling to her like a second skin, the tiny crop top barely contains her breasts and her hair is teased to give her more volume, she's a pretty woman but the outfit and all the make up just makes her look cheap.

"Two fingers of Jameson." I tell her before looking away to scan the

18.81%

||

08:24

O

<

His Rogue Omega

289 Mouchers

crowd, the club is pretty busy so it's not until after the woman places my drink on the bar that I see her. She's on the other side of the floor to me, wearing a similar outfit to the woman behind the bar. I can see everything she has to offer and so can every other male in the room. She hasn't seen me yet so I sit back and sip my drink as I watch her move from table to table, once her silver tray is full she moves to the bar and trades it for one with full glasses.

Eva hasn't looked at me once, she's either ignoring me or she has pushed her wolf so far down she can't smell me.

'Get her out of here.' Storm whispers to me as we watch Eva get her ass grabbed by some jackass accepting a drink from her.

'Can't. She hasn't done anything.' Eva smiles at the man before walking away, she doesn't slap him or even give him a stern look, for all intents and purposes she looks pretty happy to be here.

'She's a rogue, just take her and lock her as s down. It's within our right as Alpha.' Storm isn't wrong but I can't lock her up again, the poor girl has been a captive at every point in her life. If it wasn't The

Shalamayne then it was at Swiftmane, this last year is the only time she's ever been free.

'I won't do that to her,' I tell Storm as I drop a twenty on the bar before getting up and heading to the front door. Eva has just left the main floor and given that it's been about two hours since I got here I can only assume that means she is on break.

Walking out of the front door of the club I push past the couple making out and jog around to the back of the building. Hopefully I'm right and she comes outside for some fresh air, I stop when I see the green fire exit sign. There are no lights round here so I stay next to the wall and let the night be my cover. I don't wait long before the door opens and the clicking of heels on concrete reaches my ears. Eva just stands in the alleyway with her hands on her hips as she tilts her head up to the

41.98%

111

O

08:24

His Rogue Omega.

288 Vouchern

night sky, I watch as her breasts swell as she takes in a deep breath and releases it.

"Who's there?" She knows she's not alone but she doesn't know it's me, interesting. Stepping from the shadows I watch her big brown eyes widen further. "Cas." My name sounds like a prayer coming from her mouth, she doesn't move and neither do I. "Why are you here? Did Fraction change his mind?" She's nervous, I can see her hand trembling as she tucks a piece of her long black hair behind her ear.

"Why are you here Eva?" My voice comes out low and even I can admit it sounds intimidating in the darkness.

“My...erm...my boyfriend owns the club. He moved us here,” she takes a step back towards the door, “I haven’t done anything wrong. I did everything Fraction told me too.”

“He told you to start dating a human? Tell you to parade yourself around like a whore?” I hate myself for calling her a whore but right now she looks like one with the eyeliner on her eyes and her bright pink lips.

“It’s just a job, I have to earn money.” I nod my head at her as I take another step closer.

“And you have to do that less than a ten minute drive from my Pack? And half n*ked?” I ask her.

“Your Pack?” Her eyebrows draw together in confusion, “I didn’t even know there was a Pack around here.” The sound of metal squeaking brings both our heads towards the door she came out of, it swings open showing a chubby man in jeans and white t-shirt. I can smell the alcohol seeping out of his skin from here, I’m far enough back that he won’t be able to see me.

“Watcha doin’?” He asks with a slur in his voice.

64.99%

||| Search The website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

08:24

O

<

83.49%

“I just needed some air.” Eva says in a soft voice, her voice reminds me of someone speaking to a wounded animal

“Get yah ass inside, got tables that need a clean.” Eva looks back at me before the man grabs the top of her arm pulling her into the building. “did I stutter?” I don’t hear Eva’s response as the door swings closed once she’s pulled into the building

Once I’m alone I pull my phone from my jeans and dial my Beta’s number. It takes a few rings but finally he answers.

“Yeah?” His voice sounds like he’s been running or at least exercising in some way, looking at my watch I see it’s two in the morning.

“I need you to get a warrior to this club every night, open till close until I say otherwise.”
I start walking back to my car.

“You find the rogue?” I nod my head before I realise he can’t see me.

“Yeah I found her. Set the patrol up. I want eyes on her at all times, if she so much as sneezes I want to know about it.” I hang up the phone before he can answer me and start my car up. It’s not that I want to control Eva, it’s more that I want to know what she’s up to. I don’t understand why a pup is working in a strip club and why she can’t smell me or the Pack. I also didn’t like the way that the asshole grabbed her. He used much more force than he needed to. Eva should be cared for, protected and if he can’t do that then I will.

Join Cs & Eva in His Rogue Omega in Spring 202388

Search the **Find novel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 168

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 1.

★ Cas

288 Nouchers.

I hate this, sitting behind a desk and listening to complaints isn’t who I am. I’ve become used to running free and doing whatever I want whenever I want to, now I’m sitting here waiting on my father’s lazy ass Beta. I’m supposed to pick someone of my own but given I’ve been gone from the Pack since I was fifteen I don’t exactly have friendships here anymore.

“Anything?” Rowan shakes his head at me as he looks over at the door, I just sigh and pinch the bridge of my nose. “Alright, give me what you’ve got.” Rowan is my Head Warrior so he will know bits and pieces about what is going on in the Pack but more importantly what’s going on outside of it.

“Midsey has had an influx of drugs recently, we had to lay off six miners this week.” I grit my teeth and wave my hand for him to continue, “as far as we can tell it’s Meth but we haven’t found who’s cooking it or who’s selling it yet.”

“The warriors are on it?” We employ a lot of the Midsey townspeople in our coal mines and as far as I know there has never been drugs in this area before.

“Yeah, they are checking all the local sources. All they came up with was that rogue female but she seems to be shacking up with a human.” I nod my head at him, feigning disinterest in Eva, no one in the Pack knows who she is to me or that we have a past.

0.00%

O

<

Γ

08:24

His Rogue Omega Chapter 1

288 Vouchers

“Am I late?” Vince slams the office door open without a care for privacy and drops himself into the chair opposite me. “Why are we down here and not in the Alpha office?”

“This is the Alpha office.” I tell him, he knows why I don’t like that office and this is just his way of reminding me I don’t belong here.

“If you say so. What did you need?” I look at Rowan and his green eyes look back at me with just as much confusion.

“I want a run down on the Pack, as per normal for a weekly Alpha meet.” Vince just sighs and leans his bald head back on the chair, “what’s the problem?”

“I’m just not used to it I guess, never did this before.” I know that’s not true, my father held meetings all the time so me calling one can’t be unusual for him. “Nothing much is happening, some of the older ladies don’t like the church being closed off.” I notice he doesn’t mention the drugs which means he doesn’t want me to know or he’s clueless and slacking in his role as Beta.

“Anything else?” I narrow my eyes at him as I try to figure out what game he’s playing. He knows his days as Beta are limited so I’m sure he’s planning something.

“Nope, I’m going for some breakfast.” Vince just gets up, hitches his jeans over his beer belly and leaves the office.

“What the hell was that?” Rowan sounds shocked that my Beta just talked to me the way he did.

“That’s my father’s Beta knowing his days are limited. Tell me about the drugs,” leaning down into my desk drawer I pull out a bottle of Jameson and two glasses, pouring two good measure drinks I slide one across my wooden desk to Rowan.

20.05%

|||

O

08 24

His Rogue Omega Chapter 1.

288 Vouchers

“There ain’t much to tell right now,” Rowan sips from his glass as he speaks. “I’ve got the warriors doing the patrols you asked for, so far the rogue just seems to be working and sleeping. She doesn’t seem to do much more, if she has something to do with the drugs we haven’t seen it yet.” I sip at my own drink as I try to think of where the drugs could be coming from, if they start bleeding into the Pack it could start causing more trouble for me.

“Keep an eye on it, I don’t want that sh it on Packland. As for Eva,” Rowan raises his eyebrow at me and I realise I just slipped up by mentioning her name. “Keep patrols on her, I don’t know what she’s up to but she’s still a rogue in our backyard.”

“She ain’t broken any rules yet.” He’s right she hasn’t but a rogue is a rogue and if I didn’t do something it would look even more suspicious, “it’s odd, I can’t smell her designation and I’ve been pretty damn close. I could swear she can’t smell us either.”

“When have you been that close to her?” As far as I’m aware the warriors are doing distance patrols not up close and personal ones.

“I wanted to get a feel for her so I went into the strip club last night, she was dancing and with all that sweat it was hard to miss or not miss as it was.” I just sip at my drink, so she’s dancing now, when I saw her last month she was only waitressing.

“Alright, keep me updated. And do me a favour and remind your mate to check in once in a while?” Rowan just laughs as he stands from the chair and puts the empty glass on my desk.

“Will do Alpha.” He leaves my office with a lot more respect than Vince did, he even closes the door behind him.

Leaning back in my chair I try to think about who could be selling the drugs in town but the only person I can think of is Eva. It’s been just

43.65%

O

08.24

His Rogue Omega Chapter 1.

288 Vouchers

over a month since I heard there was a rogue setting up home in Midsey, I was shocked to learn not only was the rogue female but it was Eva. The last time I saw her she was running off to stop The Shalamayne for Alpha Fraction and Alpha Daryl. I hated letting her go but she was the only one who could stop them. I wanted to take her back with me when the fight was over but Fraction overruled me, he needed to pass his judgement.

She was meant to go to an apartment in New York which is only a few hours from me. I paid for it up until her eighteenth birthday. When Rowan went to get her for me, she was not only gone but he couldn’t find any sign she had been there. I thought she was gone and I had lost her forever, only for her to show up in my own back garden with a drug scandal hanging around her.

‘She is no drug pusher,’ Storm tells me as he prowls back and forth, I can feel his annoyance at me thinking Eva is involved in the drugs.

‘I don’t think she is either but I have to consider it, it can’t be a coincidence that she shows up with a human partner and so does a drug problem.’ I can feel my wolf’s aggression as Storm growls at me, ever since I found out Eva wasn’t in New York he has been in a hellish

bad mood.

‘Should have just dragged her home that night in the whore house.’ He hates Eva working in a strip club as much as I do, standing from my desk I grab my car keys.

'Told you, I couldn't do that. How about we go for some lunch?' He always calms down when I go to the Dixie Diner and he gets to have a glimpse of her. I try to limit my trips to the diner to once a week but recently I've been there a little more than that.

'Lunch lads?' I send out a message over the Packlink, I hear a few of the guys respond including Rowan as I leave and lock my office. It's

70.28%

||| SEARCH on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

08:24

His Rogue Omega Chapter 1.

288 Vouchers

kind of sad that I have to lock my own office in my own Packhouse but I don't know who can be trusted here yet. Sighing, I slide my keys into

my back pocket when Sookie chimes in asking to come along.

96.96%

Search the **Find_** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 169

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 2.

Eva☆

288 (Vouchers

"Order up!" I look over at the hatch and see Jason putting a fresh batch of blueberry pancakes down, "table six!" His shouting is not needed given there are only three customers in the whole diner, heading over to the window I keep my eyes on the food as Jason smiles at me. He's forever trying to talk to me and flirt with me like he does the

other waitresses, I know he doesn't mean anything by it but if Jeremy got wind it would mean a world of hurt for me.

"Refill?" I ask the older guy sitting at table six, I've not seen him before so I think he's just passing through. Most people either spend their whole lives here in Midsey or they pass through and leave it in their rear view mirror.

"Please darlin" I think I detect a slight Texan accent but I'm not great with those things so I could be wrong, I just nod my head and go to grab the coffee jug.

"I'm so da mn sick of these early mornings," Selena is leaning next to the coffee machine, she hates doing the morning shift and she likes to make sure everyone knows it. I just nod my head at her as if agreeing and head back over to table six, once I've filled the guys cup I do a quick scan of the other two tables and seeing they don't need anything I head back over to the machine. "You need to slow down, I don't know where you get your energy." I smile at Selena as I pull the sugar bowls towards me, they are pretty full but I can get more in to keep my hands busy.

0.00%

<

08:25

His Rogue Omega Chapter 2

288 Vouchers

"At least your day is done at noon." I tell her quietly, I keep my eyes on my work so should anyone see me they will assume I'm just dutifully doing my job.

"I still don't know how you do it, shy like you are. Working at a strip club," she lowers her voice and leans into me as if the words leaving her mouth are somehow d*rty. I just shrug my shoulders at her, there isn't much I can say it's not like I choose to work here or the strip club. If I could be anywhere else in the world then I would go there in a heartbeat.

"Ladies." I look up to see Liam, the diner owner coming over to us, he's a nice enough guy he tends to leave us alone most days. As long as we do the work he just hides in his office doing God only knows what, it's actually a rarity to see him during the morning shifts. "Tips for the month." He holds out two envelopes. Selena snatches one from him while I just wait for him to place it on the counter in front of me. I don't pick it up until he walks himself away from the counter. I never used to have a problem meeting men's eyes but in the last few months I've learnt the consequences that come with speaking to the wrong men. Opening up the envelope I see a few hundred dollars,

sighing as I slide it into my apron, there is no point in getting excited, it's not mine to keep anyway.

"Come on little lady, it's time to clock off." I just shake my head at her as she unties her apron. I have to admit Selena has one hell of a figure, she has legs for days and a waist that would make any man want to grab hold of her. The blonde hair and blue eyes just add to her beauty.

"Can't, I'm doing the afternoon shift." I slide the sugar pots back into their little section as I listen to Selena putting her mornings takings inside of the till.

"Again? Jesus Eva, when do you sleep?" She walks away from me laughing as the bell above the door lets me know more customers are

19.37%

08:25

|||

O

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 2

288 Vouchers

coming in. For the next hour I will be on my own so I wipe my hands down my apron and get ready for the lunchtime rush.

Arlene never showed for her shift so it's just been me, Jason and Gabbie all afternoon, my feet hurt and I have a blister from picking one of the chicken sizzler plates up without a towel. Dixie Diner is the go to place for anyone in Midsey and the next town over so come lunch time it gets really busy, the waitresses like working this shift because the tips are good but usually around three in the afternoon I'm dead on my feet.

"Just sat a six top in your section." Gabbie says as she runs past the counter towards her own section. An involuntary moan leaves my lips as I slide my notepad into my apron and head over to my section. It takes me longer than I care to admit to realise there is suddenly the smell of shifters floating around the room. I'm not at all surprised to see Everfur Pack members sitting at the table that has just been sat, what does surprise me is that Cas is one of them. I haven't seen him since the night he showed up at the strip club, until then I didn't even know there was a Pack in the area, let alone his Pack. I keep my eyes on my notepad so I don't have to look into Cas's chocolate brown pools, each time he catches my eyes I get lost in his gaze.

“What can I get for you all?” My voice comes out really low and for a second I don’t think they have heard me until a female giggle has me looking up.

“They let anyone work here,” the platinum blonde girl is leaning across the table and running her long red nails along Cas’s arm. I have to remind myself that I don’t care as I smile at her, it’s a mask I have perfected, a face that doesn’t let anyone around me know how I actually feel.

“Today’s special is the BLT with sweet potato fries and a garlic aioli dip.” I hold my pen up to my pad as I wait for the orders from the

44.31%

|||

<

08.25 T

His Rogan Omega: Chapter 2

members of the table.

1288 Wochers

“We’ll take six of those and a round of cola’s please.” It takes me a second to realise it’s the woman directly to my left speaking and not the one pawing at Cas’s arm. I smile down at her and nod my head as I turn to leave the table, Cas doesn’t say anything but I can feel his eyes on me the entire way to the kitchen hatch.

“Why do you let a rogue work here baby?” I shudder a little at being called a rogue, it implies I have a wolf which I’m pretty sure I don’t.

“Not much of a rogue, I can’t even smell her designation. The smell of shifter is barely noticeable in her.” One of the males tells her as Jason takes the slip from me, I busy myself organising the old tickets as I cavedrop on their conversation. It’s not often I get to see shifters and it would be good to know if Cas is planning on uprooting me anytime soon, as Alpha he has every right.

“Enough.” It’s the first time I’ve heard Cas speak since that night in the alleyway and it still has the same effect on me. I feel the goosebumps run down my back as his voice washes over me, I’ve never felt this way about anyone just from their voice before. “You will not show me up in public.”

“Baby,” the blonde says, it sounds like a child complaining to its parent more than a partner complaining to their equal.

“Don’t baby me Sookie, I’ll send you home faster than you can blink if you don’t behave.” I look around me to see who else has just heard Cas reprimand one of his wolves, no one is looking their way though so I assume I’m the only one who overheard their conversation. By the time I get back to the table with their food the blonde, Sookie, is leaning back in her chair and pointing some pretty serious eye daggers at Cas. After putting four of the plates down I go to turn and grab the other two plates still on the hatch, I can only carry so many things at once. Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

69.15%

|||

O

<

08:25 m

His Rogue Omega Chapter 2.

1288 Vouchers

“Hey, you forgot our food.” I turn around to see Sookie waving between her and Cas. I know I should serve the Alpha and Luna first but they aren’t my Alpha and Luna.

“I’ll be right back with them.” Cas smirks at me like he finds something funny, while Sookie just tuts at me. Most waitresses would take their time getting back to their table but I want them out of here sooner rather than later so I put on a burst of speed and finish their order as quickly as I can.

93.78%

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 170

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 3.

★ Cas w

1 248 Voucherg

“Sookie doesn’t come to the diner again and I don’t want her on the rogue patrols.” I slam my hands down on the steering wheel as I turn the SUV towards the Packhouse, Rowan just looks over at me with a confused look.

“Who is she to you?” I just shrug my shoulders, I’m not ready for him to know who or what Eva is to me.

“Just make it happen. that s hit in a human establishment is not acceptable. And why the f uck does she think me and her are together?” Sookie was all over me in the diner and I can still smell her fake rose perfume clinging to my skin.

“Your mother is to thank for that one.” I slam the breaks on and the car jolts to a stop. I wave the other car on as they pass us. “What was that for?”

“What do you mean my mother is to thank for Sookie?” I turn to look at Rowan, his brown hair has flopped into his eyes so he sweeps it back.

“Sookie is one of the stronger females we have in the Pack, your mother told her when you became Alpha it was likely you would take her as Luna.” I slam my head back on the car chair and close my eyes, of course my mother promised me to a female in the Pack, it’s just like her to try and take control of my life like this. “Sookie ain’t so bad, Cas. She’s just very impressionable, your mother has been whispering in her ear for a long time.”

0.00%

“Thanks for telling me.” I look over when the seatbelt clicks and the car door opens. “Where are you going?” I didn’t mean for him to leave the car when I stopped. I just wanted privacy and at home there is always someone listening in.

“I’m gonna get a start on patrol, are you good to get back on your own?” I don’t dignify him with an answer. I’m an Alpha, I can drive a few miles down the road alone.

Leaving Rowan in Midsey I decide not to go straight back to the Pack, instead I head in the direction of the coal mine. It’s not too far from where the Pack lives and is still part of our land, this is where the Pack makes its money. Thanks to the size we can’t man it alone which is why we employ humans, pulling up in front of the trailer we work out of I see a new looking red Mercedes parked in front of it. Parking next to it I get out of the SUV. intrigued as to who could be visiting a coal mine in such a nice car

“Thanks again for your time.” The trailer door opens to show a tall man in a black suit. I’m six foot nine so this guy must be at least six foot five. I instantly dislike him. he’s too clean and too polished, no one looks that good unless they are trying to hide something.

“No problem. thanks for coming over Mr Grant.” Harry, the guy who has run the mine since I was a pup says to him, he’s a nice enough guy and I left him in control of the mine because he knows it like the back

of his hand.

Mr Grant barely even glances at me as he effortlessly climbs into his shiny red car and peels out of the dusty lot.

“What gives Harry?” I ask as I walk towards the trailer, Harry is looking much older than he did when I last saw him. He gained a lot more weight around the middle, a lot more grey hair and a few extra

15.41%

III

His Rogue Omega Chapter 3.

288 Vouchers

wrinkles.

“Ah, Cas lad. Come on in,” he moves out of the doorway so I can climb into the trailer. It’s exactly as I remember it from when I was a pup, I used to hide out in here when my father was on one of his religious streaks. The leather red sofa is slightly more cracked and the shelves are filled with more paperwork but otherwise it even still smells the same. Like an old man, stale coffee and toast, it’s a smell I will forever associate with Harry.

“Who was that?” I ask Harry as I settle onto the red leather sofa, I spread my arms over the back as I wait for him to take his seat behind the desk. It seems smaller in here but then again the last time I was in here I was a fifteen year old pup.

“That was Mr Grant, he’s the guy who rocked up in town a few months back with that rogue.” My interest piqued, I sit up a little straighter, I knew Eva was seeing a human but I didn’t know it was him.

“He’s the one who owns the strip clubs?” Harry just nods his head as he leans over and flicks the coffee pot on, “what did he want?”

“Wanted to ask about our transit routes and if he could buy some space in them, can’t imagine what a strip club owner needs a truck like ours for.” The trucks we use to ship coal up and down the country are massive heavy good vehicles, Mr Grant must want to move something pretty big. “I told him where to stick it, whatever he wants to move it can’t be legal or he would just hire them elsewhere.” I nod my head in agreement.

“You’ll tell me if he comes back?” Harry just makes an affirmative tone as he pours himself a coffee and holds the cup up to me, I shake my head no.

“Was going to be my next stop but you beat me to it.” I have no doubt that Harry would have come to me, he was always on my side when my

35.56% search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

|||

O

08:25

His Rogue Omega Chapter 3

288 Vouchers

mother and father thought I needed to be punished for one thing or another.

“Tell me about the drugs? Is it just the humans or the Pack too?” Harry sips his coffee before picking up a file and tossing it to me.

“These are the six I let go yesterday and another two this morning. So far it’s only the humans, if it was a Pack member I would come to you not Rowan.” I open the file and see eight people of different ages and gender, none of them are related to what the file says. From what I can tell at first glance there is no link to any of them.

“Keep me updated, if you need more bodies here let me know and I’ll get more Pack involved. I want zero tolerance for this s hit.” Harry just nods at me as I tap the file on the desk and get up to leave the trailer.

“Glad your back son,” I smile as I close the trailer door behind me. Harry raised me more than my own parents did. He taught me what it was to be a wolf and how to not be my father. I was so concerned with being my father when I grew up that I used to come to the trailer late at night and train with Harry.

Once I’m in the SUV I pull out my phone, seeing a text message from Sookie I swipe it away without even looking at it. I need to make sure she knows where she stands and it’s certainly not where my mother thinks she stands. Pulling up Rowan’s number I

connect it to my car bluetooth and wait for him to pick it up as I drive out of the parking lot.

“Yeah?” Rowan’s voice comes clear over the car speakers.

“Harry had to let two more go, we need to get to the bottom of this before we have no miners left.” Rowan curses down the phone just before I hear some rustling and then some whispering I can’t make out.

55.82%

08:25 m

His Rogue Omega Chapter 3

288 Vouchers

“Rowan?” I’m confused as to what he’s doing.

“Sorry, my mates just kindly informed me she has seen someone selling out of the strip club the rogue works at. I’ll keep an eye on it and see if it’s the source.” I slam my hands on the steering wheel, everything seems to be pointing to Eva but I can’t believe for a second she’s mixed up in drugs.

“Let me know what you find out, I think you might need to give that mate of yours a good old fashioned spa nking.” Rowan laughs as I hear a female grumbling in the background, “and remind her she needs to come to check in, or at least call.”

“Will do Alpha, I’ll come see you after my shift.” I press the button on my steering wheel to disconnect the call and put my foot down so I build up speed along the empty road.

Pulling up in front of the cream painted Packhouse I see I’m just in time to catch my mother before she heads off to the bar. Since my father passed she’s spent every night she can there, it’s like she’s making up for lost time.

“There’s gin in the house.” I shout over to her as she goes to step into her car.

“I prefer the bar,” I walk over to her and grab the keys out of her hand.

“Can’t have you driving around while you’re drunk,” she’s already swaying on her red heels so I know she’s done some pre-drinking. “You can also keep your male visitors away from the Packhouse.”

“You’re just jealous because no one wants to come to your bed,” I scrunch up my nose at being spoken to like that by my own mother. “Who I spend my nights with is none of your business.”

75.26%

|||

O

08:25

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 3.

288 Vouchers

“It’s my business when your squealing wakes up the whole house at three in the morning.” I start to walk towards the house when I realise I didn’t mention Sookie like I meant to, “and while we are on partners. Stop encouraging Sookie, it’s da mn creepy.”

“She’s a nice girl, it’s unseemly for an Alpha to be single.” I grab her arm and her dull brown eyes go wide.

“My relationships have nothing to do with you, keep your nose out of it or I will make you stay out of it.” She just sneers at me as I push her away, she stumbles for a second before righting herself and walking off down the driveway.

93.04%

|||

O

Search the **Find novel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 171

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 4.

Eva☆

“I don’t want to work in the champagne room,” I regret the words the second they leave my mouth, I take a step back from Jeremy as he looks at me from the other side of his desk. “I’m sorry, I didn’t mean it.”

“On your knees,” I start to shake as I do as he tells me and lower myself to the floor, I put my eyes down and spread my knees until they are as far apart as possible. I place my hands palm up on my thighs and wait for him to issue whatever punishment he deems appropriate this time. “How many times do we have to go through this?” Jeremy’s voice rubs over me like sandpaper. There was a time that I loved when he made me do this but then it turned dark, much darker than I liked.

I hear the scrape of his chair as he stands from his desk and then the clinking of the metal tells me he’s taking off his belt. I shiver and try to hold myself still, I know what’s coming and I really wish he had picked something else, anything else.

“Lean forward,” I must not move fast enough for him because he grabs the back of my head and shoves me down onto the wooden floor. “One of these days you are going to just do as you are told.” I hear the swoosh through the air a split second before the belt hits my back, I don’t cry out, I know this will only cause me more punishment. I bite my tongue as I feel the metal of the buckle break into my skin, blood fills my mouth just as I feel the blood trickle down my back. “You make me do this, if you did what you were told you wouldn’t have to be punished.” A second and third lash comes down just as hard as the first, he’s just getting started, I know these are nothing compared to

0.00%

08:29

O

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 4

288 Vouchers

how he will end. A knock on the office door offers me a small reprieve and Jeremy steps back to answer it.

“What?” He doesn’t like being interrupted, the person who knocked won’t even see his wrath though. He reserves that for me and only for

me.

“She’s been requested in the champagne room.” It’s Cyrus, the bar manager, he’s the only other person who knows how Jeremy treats me.

“Give them a drink on the house, she’ll be out in an hour.” Jeremy slams the door closed, “now where was I?” I hear the swoosh of the belt as he starts to really lay into me, each lash makes me want to scream out in agony but I keep it all inside. I’ll save it until I’m alone and no one will hear me, it will be my own little pity party. I lose count of how many lashes he does, I wish I was in something more than a bra and g-string. At least a t-shirt would offer some semblance of protection, then again he would probably rip it from me.

“Now I suggest you dig deep and make those wounds heal up nice and quick, you have a paying customer.” To this day I don’t know how Jeremy knows what I am but from what I gather he knew it from the day he first met me. What I thought was a chance encounter in a Seattle coffee shop turned out to be a calculated move by a dominant

ar seh le.

Jeremy walks away from me and sits back down behind his desk, I keep my eyes on the floor as I will my back to heal. It’s not always as fast as I would like but it’s much faster than a normal human. I don’t have a wolf but I do have accelerated healing, so far Jeremy hasn’t hurt me to a point I haven’t been able to heal myself. I’m not sure how much time passes but soon Jeremy is walking back around me and wiping at my back, due to the lack of stinging I assume my wounds have closed up and now he’s just getting rid of the evidence.

22.69%

|||

J

08 29

His Rogue Omega Chapter 4

288 Vouchers SEAR*ch on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

“Make that man see the moon and stars or this punishment will look like a walk in the sun.” He gives my head another shove to the floor just before he grabs my black hair and pulls me up. “Now give me a k*ss.” He doesn’t give me a chance to respond before his tongue is being shoved down my throat. I don’t k*ss him back, I just keep my mouth open and let him have his fill. It’s over quickly thanks to the customer waiting and I am being pushed out of his office.

I keep my head down as I make my way through the corridor and past the other dancers, I'm pretty sure they know Jeremy beats me but without marks to show they can't prove it. And neither can I. I've thought about running a few times, when I picture it I imagine myself deep in the woods surrounded by trees. Maybe next to a stream I can listen to, I've always loved the sounds of nature and lately I haven't gotten to enjoy it much.

The club is busy tonight, it's Friday so all the miners are here blowing their wages on women they can never have. That's what Jeremy sells here, fantasy and S**, if you can pay enough money you get the second and if not, then you have to make do with the first. Cyrus is standing by the door into the champagne room, he's wearing his normal black slacks and white shirt that barely contains his rounded stomach. Sometimes he wears a white wife beater but when Jeremy is in he always likes to dress up.

"Come on lass, you're keeping him waiting." I try to speed up as much as my stripper heels will allow but even after two months I still struggle to walk in these things. "He put down a credit card so you can give him whatever he wants." I don't say anything to him as he opens the door to the room and pushes me inside.

The champagne room is the place you take one of the girls when you don't want anyone else to know what you're up to. It's a room with a

47.27%

|||

O

08:29

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 4

288 Vouchers

massive double bed, a wall of floor to ceiling windows and a two seater sofa with a low back perfect for bending someone over. In the centre of the room is a perfectly polished stripper pole, the soft lilac of the room makes it feel like a comfortable safe place. Hidden in the ceiling is a speaker for the music to be played through and although no one has ever said it I'm almost certain there is a camera or two in here. It isn't the room that makes me pause though, it's the man sitting on the sofa. He's got this cocky grin on his face, his hair looks just as ruffled and shaggy as always, he is so tall that his legs come out quite far beyond the tiny sofa.

"Hello." I don't say his name in case my suspicions about the camera's is right.

“Hello kid.” His voice washes over me like water running down a river, he sends goosebumps down my spine and has this way of making me feel completely n*ked. Like he can see everything I have and everything that I am.

“What music would you like?” Cas just shrugs his shoulders as he slides further down into the sofa cushions.

“You pick, nice and loud I think.” I nod my head as I walk over to the panel on the wall and choose Cherry Pie by The Warrant. As the song comes on I can feel it vibrating through my b*dy as I start to swing my hips and slowly walk over to him.

“Lap or pole?” Cas just looks down at his legs that are spread open ready for me to step in between, I take the hint and stand between his thighs swinging my hips from side to side.

Normally I take myself somewhere else mentally when I’m in here but with Cas I can’t seem to take my blue eyes from his chocolate brown ones. He’s holding me captive without even touching me, I bring my hands up from my hips, slowly caressing the sides of my b*dy. I’m

72.56%

[1]

O

08:29

288 Vouchers

moving in time with the music and most guys would have their eyes on my tits or even my hips but not Cas, he hasn’t looked anywhere but my eyes. I can’t take the intensity anymore so I turn around giving him a view of my ass in the red g-string.

96.61%

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 172

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 5.

Cas

288 Vouchers

The sexy vixen in front of me turns around and I almost lose my breath at the sight of her pale ass. The red g-string is playing peek-a-boo between the pale orbs, I would be seriously aroused right now if it wasn't for the lack of arousal coming from her. She's not finding this sexy at all, this is work to her and nothing more, if I'm not mistaken the scents coming from her are closer related to fear and nerves. I watch Eva's hands run up her sides and into her raven black hair, it takes me a second to realise she's going for the tiny straps of her bra.

"No." I hate myself for saying it and stopping her but I won't see her for the first time like this. The only reason I'm here and not one of my warriors is because I didn't want to have to kill one of my men in my first year as Alpha.

"No?" She glances back over her shoulder, her hips stop moving to the sound of the stupidly loud song. I need to speak with her but I'm almost certain there are cameras in here and I don't want to be

overheard.

"Come here," I pat my jean clad knee, indicating that I want her to come and sit.

She hesitates for a second before slowly dropping herself onto my lap, even through my jeans I can feel the heat coming off her skin. Leaning forward I bury my nose in her hair and sniff deeply, it's there right behind her ear that I smell it. The soft lavender scent mixed with warm chocolate brownies, it's a scent unique to her and one only I can smell.

0.00%

O

08.29

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 5.

288 Vouchers

"Erm, what now?" She's sitting stock still on my knee, I have to stop myself from wondering how many other men she's done this for.

“I could do anything I want to you.” I whisper into her ear, I feel her shiver as her scent suddenly becomes a little sweeter a split second before she slams her legs closed and lifts herself up. “Dance for me.” I push on her hips and she takes the opportunity to place her head on my shoulder and start gyrating against my cock. She’s not the most skilled dancer but honestly I’m loving every second of it.

The song ends and Crazy Bit ch by Buckcherry starts to blast out of the speakers, Eva spins around and straddles my hips. This puts her barely covered centre over my jean covered cock, I try to capture her eyes again but she’s purposefully looking over my shoulder as she grinds against me.

“Tell me something,” I speak quietly but I know she hears me as her head tilts to the side a little. “Is someone selling drugs out of here?” Eva shakes her head no and shrugs her shoulders a little bit. “Is that a no or I don’t know?”

“I don’t know.” Eva whispers as she lowers her head down to make it look like she’s teasing me with her mouth, I can feel her breath in my ear and my cock starts to respond.

“If you see any, will you tell me?” I put my hand on her hips and she gasps at the skin to skin contact.

“I’ll try.” Her words are barely above a whisper which means she knows she is being watched in here.

“Are you happy Eva?” I ask her as the song ends and a knock on the door tells me my time is up.

“I’m right where I’m supposed to be, I deserve this.” I furrow my brow

21.09%

|||

O

08:29

hega Chapter

288 (Vouchers

as she steps off my lap and straightens herself out, “I hope you enjoyed your time here at Dragon’s Flame.” She smiles at me but doesn’t move, for a second I wonder what she’s waiting for but then I remember where we are. Sliding my hand into my jeans I pull out my wallet, fl*pping it open I pull out a hundred dollars and hand it to her.

“You were perfect, kid.” She slowly takes the tip from me before turning on her stupidly high heels and walking from the room.

I wait a good ten minutes before leaving, I don't want to seem like I'm in too much of a rush to leave. Walking out of the room I see Eva standing next to the man from Harry's trailer this afternoon, neither of them look my way and they seem like they are in deep conversation. I don't know how a man can allow his woman to walk around looking like Eva does right now. There isn't a single man near her that isn't eye fucking every inch of her body.

‘Get her out of here.’ I quickly push through the gathering crowd as Storm growls at me, I need to leave before he takes over and does something we'll both regret. At the coat check I retrieve my credit card and then head for the car. I'm barely across the parking lot when I hear a whistle from the trees at the edge of the building. Looking around me I see I'm alone so I quickly jog over and jump into the greenery.

“Well?” Rowan is wearing a pair of joggers and nothing else, he's sitting on the ground behind one of the trees.

“Nothing, she said she doesn't know of any drugs being sold here.” Rowan makes a face that makes me think he doesn't believe her.

“Or she's covering for her human boob, I mean she's one weird cookie. She works day and night, as far as I can tell she sleeps four, maybe five hours at a time.” Rowan shakes his head making his brown hair flop into his eyes, “that chick has something keeping her going and I seriously doubt it's her love of work.”

44.11%

O

r

08.30

His Rogue Omega Chapter 5

288 Vouchers

“Well until we figure it out I want eyes on her and the club. She knows something and if she doesn't someone in this club does, if we keep having to lay off people because of drugs we aren't going to have any employees left.” Rowan holds up a hand telling me to be quiet as he looks around the tree.

“Speak of the female.” I poke my head around the tree and see Eva walking across the parking lot with Mr Grant, the man she was talking with in the bar.

“You know who he is?” I nod my head at the guy forcing Eva into his red car.

“Jeremy Grant, as far as I can tell he’s a squeaky clean business owner.” I highly doubt that, if I’ve learned anything from my time away from the Pack it’s that everyone has a secret they keep hidden. Search the Find_ website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

“Jeremy, wait up!” The man from behind the bar comes running out of the club waving his arm, he seems really glad when Jeremy turns around and looks at him.

“What?” Jeremy sounds less than impressed at being interrupted.

“You said I could have some time tonight,” he looks into the front window of the car and waves his fingers at Eva. Thanks to the light above the car I can’t see her or her reaction.

“Not tonight, maybe tomorrow if she behaves herself.” The guy from behind the bar gets really red in the face, he clenches his hands into fists as he just nods at Jeremy. “Don’t worry lad, one of these days she will fuck up bad enough that it takes two of us to punish her.” I look over at Rowan who seems just as confused as I am, what exactly does he mean by punishing her.

‘I don’t think he punishes her the same way we would.’ I have to agree

71.09%

|||

O

08:301

r

93.63%

His Rogue Omega Chapter 5

288 Vouchers

with Storm on that one, with the way Jeremy was speaking he was hoping he could punish Eva and not in the kinky work me up until I blow kind of way.

Me and Rowan wait until the red car is gone out of the parking lot before coming out from behind the tree and heading to my SUV. Neither of us says anything as we drive

back to the Packhouse. I think both of us are wondering what that six foot five ar seh ole is doing to the tiny pale face Eva.

|||

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 173

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 6.

Eva☆

288 Vouchers

It's been two days since cas came into Dragon's Flame asking me about drugs being sold here. I lied to him and told him I didn't know anything but I know Jeremy sells something that isn't legal. I'm not certain it's drugs as I've never been allowed in the basement but I know only a select few people know about it. I told Cas I would tell him if I saw any drugs but I'm not even sure how I would do that, I don't have a phone and I never go anywhere without Jeremy knowing about it.

"Earth to Eva!" Selena is standing in front of me waving her manicured hand in my face.

Recharge successful!

"Sorry, what did you say?" I push Cas from my mind as I glance around the diner, I only recently did a coffee sweep so there is nothing to do right now.

"I asked if you wanted to come to the city with me next week? I have this big family thing coming up and I want a new dress." I smile at the blonde beauty, she's been trying to get me to do a girls trip with her ever since she started working here.

"I can't, I'm busy." It's only after I reply that I realise she didn't tell me a day or time, I inwardly slap myself at the sl*p up.

“Really? Eva, when do you have some down time? It seems like you are always running from one job to the next.” She looks genuinely unhappy that I’ve turned her down again. I would love nothing more than to have some time for me but Jeremy doesn’t allow it.

0.00%

|||

08:31

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 6.

288 Vouchers

“Sorry, Selena.” I walk around her and head over to the menu’s thinking I’ll give them a wipe down when the front door opens and I smell a shifter I’ve never smelled before.

The man standing in the doorway looks like a model from the front of a magazine, his full beard hides most of his face but his piercing blue eyes shine bright when he takes off his sunglasses.

“Table for one,” I just rapidly blink at the man talking before I realise he’s talking to me and I’m just staring at him. I quickly grab a menu and take him to Selena’s section, no point in putting myself under the nose of another shifter. “I didn’t think there would be another rogue around here.” His words are just for me and cause me to gasp and drop the menu on the table.

“Your server will be right over.” I practically run from the table, I head straight into the back room where the man can’t see me. I’ve been in Midsey for just over two months now and the only shifters I have ever seen have a distinct Pack smell about them. This man is full rogue, he has this earthy sp icy smell that I’ve only ever smelled on shifters belonging to anyone or anywhere.

·0[

“What was that?” Selena pops her head around the doorway, I stand up from leaning against the wall and try to calm my breathing.

“Sorry, I just felt really sick for a second.” The lie rolls right off my tongue, it’s not like I can’t tell her the man out there is a rogue and possibly really dangerous.

“Well I moved that guy to your section, Liam is sending me home early because it’s dead out there.” I inwardly moan as I nod my head at her, she walks over to the lockers as I prepare myself to go back out onto the diner floor. “You sure you’re okay Eva?” I ignore her as I hear Jason shouting that an order is ready, “oh that will be his pancakes. He

21.12%

08:31

His Ringue Omags Chapter

wants a coffee too.”

288 our hers

I feel the rogue’s eyes on me as I walk onto the floor and over to the kitchen hatch, with a shaking hand I pick up the pancakes and maple syrup. I take my time walking them over to the table, once I get there I simply pop them down and walk away to get the coffee pot. It’s really rude and with a normal customer it would cost me my tip but I don’t think a rogue will tip me anyway.

“So is it just you around here?” The guy asks as I pour his coffee into the waiting cup, he pulls the pancakes towards him and starts to tuck into them.

“No.” I keep my voice low, afraid I will be overheard talking to the stranger, I look over at the old man a few tables down and hold up the coffee pot but he just shakes his head.

“More of us or a Pack?” I just shrug my shoulders at him, sure I could warn him about Cas’s Pack but then again I don’t owe this man anything.

“Can I get you anything else?” The man just sniffs before shaking his head, I sigh in relief and retreat over to the coffee station. I try to keep myself occupied with cleaning so I don’t keep staring at the rogue but my eyes keep travelling back to him. Other than Cas and his Pack, this rogue is the first other shifter I’ve seen since my time at Swiftmane.

It isn’t long before it’s just me, the rogue and Jason in the diner, it’s just gone ten in the morning so the lunchtime rush wont start for another hour or so.

“Eva, I’m just popping out for a smoke,” Jason’s head appears in the hutch, he looks at the guy nursing his coffee cup. “If you need me just holla.” I nod my head at Jason as he leaves me alone in an empty diner

48.11%

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 6.

288 Vouchers

with the rogue, deciding I need to try and move him along. I head over with the coffee pot. I haven’t had it back on the warmer so it’s purposefully cold.

“Refill?” My voice comes out flat and as uninviting as I can make it.

“That thing will be cold by now, it’s been on the counter for the last thirty minutes.” I feel myself become stock still as he confirms he’s not only been watching me but also watching what I’ve been doing. “What are you?” I point to my name tag and look at him.

“Eva, my name is Eva.” I know it’s not what he’s asking but I don’t know how else to explain myself, I know I smell like a shifter but only partly, it’s like part of me is missing.

“Not your name, you smell like a shifter but you also don’t. You also smell like Pack but not, you’re an odd one Eva.” He pulls his wallet from his jeans and throws a fifty on the table before sliding from the blue booth seat, “the name’s Eric by the way. Feel free to let the Pack know I’m in town.” I just stand there at the booth watching Eric leave the diner and jump into a pick up, he peels out of the parking lot and heads down main street. I guess he’s staying in town and considering he’s just left almost double what his meal is worth I guess I wasn’t completely right about rogue’s being bad tippers.

I try to think of a way to contact Cas so I can tell him a rogue is in the area but I can’t think of any way to do that. Plus one rogue ratting on another, I bet there are rules about that somewhere. Some kind of rogue code, shaking my head I grab the cash on the table and slide it into my apron. I don’t owe Cas anything, I can’t tell him about drugs when I’m not sure and I’m definitely not his local link to everything rogue. Cleaning the dishes off the table I get ready for the lunch rush, I just hope the Pack doesn’t come in today.

72.51%

Search the **FindNOvel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 174

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 7.

☆Cas☆☆

298 | Vouchers

“We’ve got a problem,” I look up from the email I’m typing out to Darryl to see Rowan standing in my office doorway.

“What now?” I hit send on the email and close the laptop and Rowan takes a seat opposite my desk.

“John Mic kens was acting odd this morning,” John is one of the younger warriors, he only joined the team just before my father died. “I have him on lockdown in the cells but I think it’s drugs, his pupils are like saucers, he was all over the place during training.” Rowan has a sad look on his face, I’m sure he’s taking this personally with it being one of his warriors.

“So it’s hit the Pack, f uck.” Shifters and drugs are not a good combination, it can make you erratic and massively impair your judgement. “I need to see him, we need to be sure.”

“I’ve got Selena on her way over so she can check him out,” I nod my head at him as I grab my keys off the desk and head for the door.

“Let’s meet her over there.” Rowan follows me out of the office, he doesn’t say anything as I lock the office door and pocket the key. “Have you seen Vince anywhere?” Rowan just shakes his head as we walk up the stairs to the main floor.

As a pup my bedroom was in the basement so when I came home I reclaimed it and made the room next to it my office. My father’s office

0.00%

|||

O

08.31

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 7.

288 iVouchers

holds too many bad memories for me and honestly I haven’t been able to step a single foot inside it since he passed. I want to knock the whole house down and rebuild but that’s part of my long term plan. The cells are in an old stone building just out the back of the Packhouse, I’d prefer them to be further from the Packhouse but this was how the land was set up long before I was even a thought.

“When was the last time you were in here?” I shiver as I take in the smell of rusting metal and damp walls. I spent a lot of my childhood locked in here, sometimes for days at a time.

“Not since the night I left,” I grab one of the empty cell doors and give it a rattle. “It’s not changed any, where did you put him?” Rowan just points to the end cell and we walk along to see John doing rapid fire push ups. It takes John a while to realise he’s not alone and I think it’s the sound of Selena’s heels that alert him.

“Selena.” John drags her name out like it’s some kind of song, he sits on the bed and starts laughing.

“Goddess, what’s he taken?” Selena drops her medical bag on the floor, she’s still in her diner uniform from the diner which means she’s come straight from there instead of going to the hospital.

“We aren’t sure,” Rowan pulls Selena into his side and k*sses her on the forehead, they have been together for around two years now. My father wasn’t too happy about his Doctor being a fated mate to a warrior but I think they suit each other perfectly.

Selena pulls her blonde hair into a hair tie and then nods her head at Rowan as she lifts up her medical bag.

“John, you’re going to let Selena check you over.” I tell him as I cross my arms over my chest and watch Selena walk into the cell.

20.49%

III

08:31

His Rogue Omega Chapter 7 SEAR*ch the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

288 Nouchers

“Hold out your arm John.” Selena quickly does the blood draw, she then looks into his eyes and takes his temperature and blood pressure. “Any chance you want to make this easy and tell us what you took?”

“Didn’t take anything.” John sounds like his energy is failing him, his shoulders have sagged and his eyes are starting to close.

"I'm going to call bullsh it on that one," I say as Selena walks out of the cell. "You'll stay in here until we get to the bottom of this John." Rowan locks up the cell and we follow Selena outside, she's standing by her car looking at her phone.

"Any ideas, love?" Selena shakes her head and pockets her phone before looking up at us.

"It could be any number of drugs, I'll run the blood test at the hospital and get back to you." Selena really is incredible, she does the morning patrol at Dixie Diner to keep an eye on Eva and then she goes and does her shift at the town hospital. Being at the hospital allows her to help the humans and the shifters of the Pack. "Any news on when my morning job will stop? It's really cutting into my beauty sleep."

"Sorry, need you where you are for now. If it's too much I can try and find someone else to replace you?" I look over at Rowan as he pulls his mate in for a hug.

"She's fine, aren't you, love?" Selena just nods her head before k*ssing him on the cheek.

"Something is off with her Cas, all she does is work and work. Oh and there was a passer-by this morning, a rogue male. I think he was just passing through but I'll let you know if I see him again." She presses a button on her car key and it beeps to let us know it's unlocked, if she says the rogue was just passing through then I'm not concerned. She knows what to look for when it comes to rogues.

47.27%

His Rogue Omega Chapter 7.

288 Vouchers

"Keep me updated." She gives me a manicured thumbs up as she hops into her car and blows a k*ss at Rowan before driving off.

"Drugs and rogues, nothing is simple is it?" I laugh at Rowan as we head back to the Packhouse.

"I need to find Vince, I need to bring him up to date with everything." Rowan puts a hand on my arm stopping me from going into the house.

"Isn't that his job? I think it's time you appoint your own Beta, it will make your life easier." I sigh and head over to the railing on the porch, leaning against it I look out onto the garden.

"And who do you suggest? It's not like I have a ton of friends lining up for the job. Alpha's know who their Beta is going to be long before they get the Pack but thanks to

my old man I never got that chance.” I shake my head as I remember William from when I was about twelve, we were really close and did everything together. I’ve never felt a bond like it and then one day I woke up and him and his family were gone. My father had banished them just so I wouldn’t have that connection with a Pack member, he didn’t want me to be Alpha and he most certainly didn’t want me to have a Beta.

“You never know, there might be someone.” I smile at Rowan as he claps me on the back.

“You want the job?” Rowan just shakes his head at me, I never expected him to accept, he’s a damn good Head Warrior and it’s because it’s built into his blood. Being a warrior is who he is and I would never put him in a different role. “Come on, invisible Beta.”

let’s

go find

find my

“He’s probably off fucking someone, you know what he’s like.” I just nod my head, I know all too well what Vince is like.

74.43%

|||

08:31

His Regue Omega Chapter 6

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 8.

Eva

288 Vouchers

“Eva, get in here.” My mouth goes dry and my shoulders drop as Jeremy’s voice booms from the kitchen. I only nipped home to change out of my waitressing uniform, I sort of hoped I could just slip out and get over to Dragon’s Flame for my evening shift. Keeping my head down I let go of the front door and head through the lounge and into the kitchen. I hate this room, it’s all cold-metal surfaces and white tiles, it’s impossible to keep clean and no matter how warm the day is it’s always cold in here.

Jeremy is wearing his usual suit, he's sitting at the black and white kitchen table and is writing in a little leather bound book, I cast my eyes back to the floor just as he looks up at me.

"Your wages came in but your tips weren't deposited." I shake as I slide my handbag off my shoulder and dig into it to pull out the small envelope Liam gave me the other day.

"Sorry, it was given to me in cash this week. I completely forgot," I put the envelope on the edge of the table, I try to keep myself still as he reaches over and snatches it up.

"Liam normally puts it in my bank, why the change?" I just shrug before I remember I'm supposed to answer him with words, he hates when I don't use my words.

"He just gave me and Selena an envelope, I don't know why." I listen as he opens the envelope and counts the cash, I know how much is in

0.00%

0831

Search the **FindNOVEL.NET** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 175

His Rogue Omega Chapter 8

288 Vouchers

there, I had already gone through it myself.

"You must be a shitty waitress, this is peanuts. Maybe I should get you. the day shift at the club." Working at the club all day and night means I would be under his gaze constantly and that is not something I want.

"I like working at the diner," it's not completely true, it's slow work for little pay but it's not like I ever see my paycheck anyway.

"I know you do," I hear his chair move against the tiles and then his finger is on my chin pulling my face up to look at him. "God you are beautiful," His grip on my chin tightens and I have to force myself to not flinch away from him. "You would think the guy you have been talking to for the last two days would tip you better." I feel my eyes widen, the only regular customer in the diner the last few days has been Eric and he always leaves me a fifty percent tip. I've been putting part of my tips aside so that when I get a chance I can try and leave here, leave him.

"I don't know who you mean." I know instantly that I've been caught in my lie, Jeremy's face turns into a mask of rage a split second before he leans down and places a tender k*ss on my l*ps.

"I love you but I will not tolerate being lied to." He moves back from me and nods his head, knowing what's expected of me I drop to my knees in the perfect submission pose.

Jeremy walks around me in a circle as I lay kneeling on the cold kitchen tiles. He hasn't touched me since letting go of my chin but I know something bad is coming my way. The anger is rolling off him in waves, it's almost like an aura hanging around him.

'Run, run Eva!' I glance to the side to try and figure out who spoke but I don't see anyone but Jeremy.

21.57%

0831

His Rogue Omega Chapter 8.

288 Vouchers

"Why do you make me do these things to you?" I expect him to strike but instead he just moves a chair to right in front of me and sits down, he looks like he's getting ready to watch his favourite television show. "You may begin." I'm really confused until I feel a hand in my hair, sniffing I smell sweat, beer and a stench that is all Cyrus. "Remember the rules." SEARCH THE website on GøøGLE to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

"Of course," Cyrus crouches down in front of me and I see he's

wearing a pair of jogging bottoms and a stained wife beater that I'm almost sure would have been white at some point. "Her pussy is yours, it's a shame really." I try not to flinch away from him as he runs his thumb across my bottom l*p, "I bet she looks beautiful with tears streaming down her face and a cock pushing in as far as it will go."

“That sight is reserved for me Cyrus, get on with it. I have stuff to do this evening.” Jeremy sounds almost bored as Cyrus stands up, he smiles at me just before his fist slams into the side of my face.

It’s impossible for me to stay on my knees, the force of his punch has me seeing stars as I land on my side. I don’t have time to recover as Cyrus slams his foot into my stomach, I can’t stop myself crying out as I feel something inside of me pop and crack. I don’t understand why this is happening, normally when I’m punished I know exactly what I’ve done but this time it just seems like Jeremy wanted to be entertained.

“I was looking around your room today and I found a loose floorboard.” Jeremy talks as Cyrus continues to slam his foot into my stomach over and over again, I can barely hear what he’s saying over the rushing of my blood.

“Please, stop.” It’s the first time I’ve begged for the pain to stop in a long time, it never works but the pain Cyrus is inflicting on me hurts too much. I feel a hand in my hair as Cyrus lifts my head off the tiled

48.07%

08:31

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 8.

288 Vouchers

kitchen floor so I’m looking directly at Jeremy. In his hand is a small wooden box, one I keep hidden in my room, I know what’s in it before he even opens it.

“Four hundred and sixteen dollars, I’m disappointed in you Eva.” I feel my tears spill over as he nods at Jeremy and a foot comes down on my leg, I howl in pain as I hear and feel it snap under the pressure. I expect Jeremy to taunt me some more but instead he just takes the cash from the box before dropping it onto the floor. He then gets up from the chair, grabs his book and walks out of the room leaving me alone with Cyrus.

“I’m so glad you fucked up this badly,” Cyrus sneers at me as he hold my hair in one hand and starts slamming his fist into my face. “He says he’s beat the fight out of you and that you heal real quick, shall we put it to the test?” I don’t know why but the look in Cyrus’s eyes scares me more than anything Jeremy has ever done to me. I start to claw at the hand on the back of my head as I feel my nose burst open, his next hit slams straight on my eye, the pain radiates right to the back of my skull. Stunned still, Cyrus throws me down on the floor and starts stomping on my chest. I feel something crack within me as the room starts to go black. I try to fight the incoming darkness because I just know that if I’m not conscious this man will do more to me just because he can.

'Run, run Eva!' I hear that voice again just as I lose my fight and pass out from the pain being inflicted on me.

76.78%

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 176

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 9.

Cas☆

283 Vouchers

Slamming the emergency room doors open I am instantly hit with the smell of blood, vomit and infections, Storm instantly recoils from the smell but I push forward to the reception desk. The young woman is typing away on her computer and is oblivious to the fact that she has three powerful shifters standing in front of her.

"Eva Smith." I demand slamming my hands on the desk, the young woman glances over at me before looking back at her computer.

"Are you family?" The woman is kind of annoying me as she types quickly along her keyboard. I look over at Rowan and he steps forward tapping on the desk.

"Oh Rowan, hey. Are you here to see Selena?" Rowan puts on his best smile and leans forward.

"I sure am, where is she tonight?" The woman bites her lower lip, she's completely hypnotised by Rowan's natural charm.

"Up on trauma, she just had one hell of a case come in. Poor kid looked pretty bad." I don't wait to hear what else she says, I instantly head over to the stairwell and make my way up to the third floor.

“Explain to me again why we are rushing for a damn rogue.” Vince is not happy I dragged him to the hospital but he was with me when Selena called so there is no way I could have left him at home.

“Someone beat a rogue so badly she’s up on the trauma ward, Selena

0.00%

|||

O

08:36

His Rogue Omega Chapter 9.

288 Vouchers

said she’s never seen anything like it.” I stop mid way up the stairs and turn to see Vince slowly climbing the stairs, he’s sweating like he’s completely out of shape which I know isn’t true. “If someone can do that to a rogue what can they do to a Pack member?”

“Yeah I guess you’re right, doesn’t mean I have to like it.” I shake my head at him and continue up the stairs.

‘He means he wants to be else where fucking than be here helping another shifter.’ I have to agree with Storm, how Vince was ever made Beta is beyond me. He’s the most selfish person I have ever met, Beta’s are normally caring to a damn fault but not him.

Racing ahead I push through the door with a massive red three on it, this floor is a lot more hectic than the reception area. There are people running around in blue scrubs and everyone is shouting at each other, all asking for one thing or another. Sniffing the air I sort through all the scents until I find Selena, once I have her scent I follow it to the second to last room on the floor. I stop still at the doorway, there in the hospital bed is Eva, her naturally pale skin looks even paler, her shirt has been cut open showing me her bare stomach and red bra. Her eyes are closed and there are wires connecting her up to various machines, the scent of her blood is soaked into the very room itself. [SEARCH on GØØGLE to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.](#)

“Get these bloods done on the rush.” Selena pulls off her gloves and hands a vile of blood to a nurse before coming over to me. “Come with me.” I step to the side to let Selena pass me but I stay in the doorway watching Eva, Storm is growling in the back of my mind. He wants out so he can comfort our mate, it takes everything I have to move and follow Selena to a small room at the end of the hall.

Selena opens the door into what looks like a small family waiting area, it reminds me of one of those places Doctors take you to tell you seriously bad news. Rowan is already sitting on a seat, he jumps up as

18.61%

|||

O

08:36

288 Vouche

soon as the door opens, I can't help but notice Vince is nowhere to be found

"Tell me." I demand of Selena as soon as the door is closed, she's dressed in her blue hospital scrubs. I can still smell Eva on her thanks to the blood covering her arms and chest.

"She was a door drop." I think she must see mine and Rowan's Contusion because she shakes her head and sits down on one of the sofas: "Sorry, I mean she was dropped at the door of A&E, sometimes people do that when they want the person treated. It keeps us and the police from knowing who did it."

"How bad is she" I try to prepare myself for the worst but I can feel Storm's pain, he's already telling me it's really bad.

"She has three broken ribs, her tibia is broken in two places and her knee is dislocated. There is a blood on her brain that I'm concerned about. I'm waiting on the scan results for that. Her eye socket is factured and then add in all the cuts and bruises, she's a mess." Selena rubs a hand over her face before sighing loudly, she looks exhausted but I know she won't leave while Shifter is in the hospital. "Her wolf. I can barely sense her. I don't think she can heal this damage. The odd cut maybe but not something like this."

"Is she going to die?" The words taste like ash in my mouth but I have to know if I'm going to lose my mate before I ever really find her. Selena looks over at Rowan before looking back at me with a confused look, her eyebrows are drawn together and I can see the gears turning.

"I don't know, brain bloods can be tricky business. Cas, why do you care? She's just a rogue." It's not that Selena is uncaring, just as a Pack wolf she's been conditioned to believe rogues are dangerous and deadly, living out in the world I know differently

His Rogue Omega Chapter 9.

288 Vouchers

“Someone did this to her, she didn’t just fall down the damn stairs and get this level of damage.” I try to calm myself so I look less suspicious but I can see her reading me like I’m an open book.

“She’s your mate.” It’s not a question, it’s a statement of fact and Selena gasps as Rowan says it in a low voice. “Jesus Cas, you should have told us.” I don’t know what to say, he’s right of course, I should have told them but how was I meant to know I could trust them.

“I have to go, I won’t let her die Cas! I promise.” Selena is suddenly a whirlwind of movement, she rushes out of the room without saying anything further.

Not knowing what else to do I drop myself into one of the arm chairs, they aren’t built for someone of my size or height so my knees come to almost chest height. Rowan laughs at me before dropping into the chair next to me, he pats my upper arm which I’m sure is meant to be a comforting gesture but it just makes me feel a little uncomfortable.

“Why didn’t you tell me I was watching over your mate?” I sigh and start to move, I didn’t want anyone in the Pack to know about Eva, I’m pretty sure I can trust Rowan and Selena but I’ve been wrong about this kind of thing before.

“I wasn’t sure I could trust you.” I decide to go for honesty and tell him exactly why I’ve kept it to myself. “Would you have done your job any differently?”

“I would have done more of the patrols myself knowing I was watching the future Luna.” I look at him and I can see the actual pain on his face that I didn’t trust him with who Eva is to me.

“The Pack might not accept a rogue Luna,” it’s something that keeps tossing around in my head, the Pack is old fashioned and set in its way thanks to my father. If they reject Eva then I will have to choose

70.49%

O

08:36

ten her and the Pack, I honestly don’t think I have it in me to be
out on my own again

Ik the Pack is more open to change than you think.” I don’t

correct Rowan, I have my opinions and he has his. The world would be a boring place if we all thought the same way but I doubt anyone could change my opinion of some of the Pack members.

His Rogue Omega Chapter 9.

288 Vouchers

between her and the Pack, I honestly don't think I have it in me to be out on my own again.

"I think the Pack is more open to change than you think." I don't correct Rowan, I have my opinions and he has his. The world would be a boring place if we all thought the same way but I doubt anyone could change my opinion of some of the Pack members.

95.14%

08.37

|||

Search the **Find novel.net** website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 177

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 10.

☆Cas☆

1288 Vouchers

'Come to my office,' I reach out to Vince, I've had enough with his attitude and lack of work lately. Eva has been in the hospital for two days and although I want nothing more than to sit with her, I can't. It would draw too much attention if a Pack Alpha was to sit at the bedside of a rogue. I have Selena giving me hourly updates though, I've been waiting for the ball to drop but as far as I can tell neither Rowan or Selena have said anything to anyone about who Eva is to me.

'I'm busy.' I grit my teeth as Vince's voice comes over the Packlink, the fact that he's ignoring a direct order from his Alpha just shows me how little respect he has for me.

'I don't care, get your ass down here or you will be in the cells for the next few nights.' It's barbaric to lock up your Pack as punishment but I don't know how else to handle this situation.

It isn't long before my office door is being slammed open so hard it bangs off the wall shaking the pictures I've put up. I just sit in my desk chair and stare at my father's Beta. He's wearing jeans and nothing else, his hairy beer belly chest is shining with sweat which means he just came from a run or another activity I don't want to think of.

"Sit down." I add a growl behind my words and for a second Vince's hazel eyes go wide.

"What is this?" He drops himself into the chair in front of my desk and I just look at him before looking at the door. He sighs loudly before

0.00%

08:37 search the FindNovel.net website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

<

Ha Roque Omega: Chapter 10

288 Vouchers

leaning behind him and pushing the door closed.

"Tell me about the drugs in Midsey and the coal mine." I pick up my pen and pretend like I'm writing something down, in actual fact I'm just trying to make him think I don't know anything, "I heard whispers while I was in town."

"No drug problem I know of," he crosses a leg over his other and leans back in the chair, he looks completely relaxed.

"And the rogue problem?" Again I make it sound like I don't know anything, I don't understand why he's keeping these things from me.

'Because he's as useful as a dead rotten rabbit.' I inwardly laugh at Storm, my wolf definitely has a way with words.

"Only rogue I know about is the one in the hospital, if we are lucky she will die and that will be that." I fist my hand under the desk as I try to control my temper. I know he doesn't know Eva is my mate but I don't think he would care if she was.

“So this is where I’m at,” I look Vince in the eye and keep my face as blank as possible. “You are either the worst Beta in the history of Beta’s or you disrespect and hatred of me is making you purposefully neglect your role.”

“What did you just say to me boy?” Vince jumps to his feet and slams his hands onto my desk, the anger is clear on his face but I force myself to stay seated.

“That’s Alpha Cas or Alpha. I haven’t been a boy for a long time.” My words are calm and carefully chosen, I speak them slowly to make sure he hears every word.

“You’re not half the Alpha your father was, running around chasing rogues and drugs: When was the last time you held a Pack meeting or

20.70%

|||

08:37

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 10.

288 Vouchers

directed your household? Hell, where is your Luna?” Vince is raging so much that as he finishes a small dribble of spit rolls down his clean shaven chin.

“Sit down before I put you down.” There is only so much disrespect I will take, Vince holds my eyes as he growls at me, I growl back louder feeling Storm just under my skin. I pull him back as Vince lowers his head and sits back down in the chair.

“My father was an egotistical religious fanatic who ran this Pack with an iron fist, there was no room for error from anyone.” Vince goes to speak but I hold up my hand, “I’m speaking now!” I growl loudly and Vince whimpers a little as I pulse out my Alpha aura. “He was a private Alpha who never let anyone inside the Pack borders, he was a bully and an abuser. I am three times the Alpha my father was and you’re lucky I don’t kick you out on your ass!” I could bring up everything but why bring up the past to a man who doesn’t see any wrong in it.

“So what are you going to do? It’s not like you can’t have a Beta, it’s against our laws.” He’s smiling at me, thinking he’s caught me in a loophole. I open my laptop and open the email from Alpha Darryl, I’ve been speaking to him about Vince for a few days now. I’m a new Alpha and never really had anyone to guide me so Darryl is the first person I went to when I decided to do this.

“Actually I can be without a Beta for a period of one year before the Elders force me to take another or disband the Pack.” Vince suddenly looks uncomfortable, I glance at the email to make sure I have the wording right, Darryl was very clear that it needs to be exact. “I, Alpha Castiel of the Everfur Pack, declass you Vince Freelin’ from Beta to Pack member.” Vince/gasps out as his link to the Pack starts to change, I can feel it vibrating within my head as it molds into something different. “No longer will you share my confidence, my concerns or have the burden of Pack problems.” Vince howls out as I finish

42.98%

08:37

III

o

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 10.

288 Vouchers

removing him from Beta, I know it hurts. I can feel the pain too but I grit my teeth against it, Vince starts to shake with the pain as tears leak out of his eyes.

“You’re going to regret this.” I narrow my eyes at Vince as I take the threat for the promise it is.

“Leave this Pack house, you may stay on Packland but if you do anything to affect this Pack you will be exiled.” As a simple Pack Member he has no choice but to follow my order, he practically crawls to the door and leaves my office much more subdued than he entered.

Alone I lean back in my chair and let the pain of the link change come over me, it’s like an itch under my skin that I can barely get to. It’s going to be hard without a Beta but it’s not like I’ve had a proper Beta since becoming Alpha. My phone ringing has me pushing the pain back down, grabbing it off my desk. I see Selena’s name and quickly push the accept button.

“Alpha, I thought you might like to know that the rogue’s brain bleed has lessened. I will be trying to wake her later this evening.” her tone is particularly formal which makes me think she’s around other shifters.

“Are you alone?” I sit up straight in my chair. I’m ready to issue the order to Rowan if Selena is in trouble.

“The rogue Eric is still here, Alpha.” I understand now, she’s in the presence of a none Pack member so she’s being formal to show the Pack’s power.

“Do you need us there?” I hear Selena tell a nurse to get some medication just before she speaks to me.

“No Alpha, I just wanted to keep you updated.” The line goes dead and I lower my phone to the desk. If Selena says she doesn’t need us then I

70.54%

III

08:37

<

Fox: the wems to know Eva ‘In the

On it, I felt the change within the Pack II was you I’d put the word out before he does ‘I notice Rowan doesn’t disagree with my devinim but again offers me advice on how to handle it, if Rowan wasn’t so good as Head Warrior I’d have him as my Pleta

His Rogue Omega Chapter

288 Nouchers

believe her but I would be foolish not to be cautious.

‘Rowan, I need you to look into this new rogue, Selena said he’s called Eric. He seems to know Eva.’ I issue the order to Rowan over the

Packlink.

‘On it, I felt the change within the Pack. If I was you I’d put the word out before he does.’ I notice Rowan doesn’t disagree with my decision but again offers me advice on how to handle it, if Rowan wasn’t so

good as Head Warrior I’d have him as my Beta.

93.52%

Search the **FindNovel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 178

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 11.

Eva

288 | Vouchers

“Hello?” I shout out into the room but no one answers back, I’ve never been in here before, I don’t recognise the room at all. I know it’s a bedroom because there is a bed big enough for a giant, it’s solid wood with little wolves engraved in all four of the bedposts. The mattress looks plump like it would offer you all the support in the world while being super comfortable. The silk sheets-and comforter are black at night and look as if they will feel great against my smooth skin. I know that laying down on it I will look like a ghost with my pale skin.

Turning on the dark hardwood flooring I look for a door or window but I can’t see any. I can feel my panic rising as I realise I’m trapped inside this room, I don’t understand how I got in if there is no way out. There are no pictures or personal things that tell me who this room belongs to, all I know is that I have never been here before.

“Hello?” I scream at the top of my lungs, maybe I’m just not seeing the door for looking so hard and someone will come racing in. When no one does I drop myself onto the floor and curl into a ball, this must be a new game. A new punishment Jeremy and Cyrus have come up with. The last thing I remember is Cyrus beating me in the kitchen and feeling more pain than I have ever felt in my life. Which is saying something considering the scars marking my back.

Hearing a small whimper I sit up and hold my breath, after a second I hear it again.

“Hello?” This time I speak softly in case I spot whoever is

whimpering.

0.00%

O

11:29

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 11.

288 Vouchers

“Is he gone?” The voice that answers back sounds familiar but I can’t quite place it.

“Is who gone? There is only me here.” looking towards the massive bed I try to see around it, there is nowhere else to hide but under there.

“I don’t want to hurt anymore, I had to make it stop.” I go to my hands and knees, crawling across the floor, I try to push down the fear flowing through me. The voice sounds like it belongs to a small child and I can’t sit by and watch Jeremy and Cyrus hurt someone so young. “I told you to run but you don’t hear me, you never hear me.”

“I hear you now.” I say as I try to see under the bed, it’s so dark under there that all I can make out I’d a dark shadow. “Please come out.”

“No, safe here. Always safe here.” Sitting back on my ass I try to figure out how to get the girl out from under the bed.

“What’s your name?” I figure if we get to know each other maybe I’ll be less of a stranger and she might come out.

“Ghost.” Odd name but I go with it, I met an Alpha called Fraction once so I guess there are many strange names out there.

“I’m Eva.” It feels odd introducing myself to someone I can’t see

“I know who you are and you know who I am. We have known each other for a long time, Eva.” I lay myself flat on the floor again so I can pull myself under the bed, as I get closer to the shadow I hear a growl that seems to make the floor vibrate.

“Ghost? Who are you?” The growling gets louder so I hold myself still, I know a warning when I hear one.

“It’s time to go Eva,” I look behind me expecting to see some feet at the

20.99%

III

O

Γ

11 29 0

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 11.

end of the bed but there is nothing there. "I'm always here, you just have to listen. When it's time you run, run to him and he will keep you safe. I swear it, it's fated." Search the Find_ website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

I try to ask Ghost what she means but there is a sudden sharp pain right in the centre of my chest, my head starts to throb and a beeping sound surrounds me. The floor beneath me seems to vibrate as the sounds around me start to get louder and louder, clapping my hands over my ears I try to block it out. I don't know what's happening but I know it can't be good.

"Eva, can you hear me?" Another voice I know but this time I know exactly who is talking, sniffing I'm confused by what I smell. "Eva, if you can hear me squeeze my hand." Instead of squeezing her hand I pull my hand from her grip and open my eyes to see Selena standing over me in blue scrubs. Her hair is pulled back into a tight ponytail and the bags under her deep blue eyes, the thing that confuses me is the scent of Pack shifter rolling off her. "I know this is confusing Eva, you were hurt very badly. Do you remember?" She holds up a little metal tube and tries to shine the light into each of my eyes.

"You're," my words get stuck in my throat so I swallow a few times before trying again. "You're a shifter." Selena looks stunned for a second before lowering the little flashlight and stepping back slightly.

"I am." She at least has the decency to look embarrassed at being caught in her lie.

"How? I've never smelt you before." I try to pull the cover up but there are wires attached to my chest and a needle in my arm which stops much movement. "What is this?"

"I used a spray to hide their scent, we didn't know who you were or if you were dangerous." Selena takes a step closer to me but I just scoot back on the bed a little, right now she's coming off as the dangerous

42.03%

|||

11:29

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 11.

288 Vouchers.

one. "You're in the hospital, you were beaten pretty badly and it's taken almost four days for me and your wolf to fix you."

"I don't have a wolf," I shake my head as I feel a clawing somewhere in the back of my head. "You lied to me, you were my friend. My only friend and you lied to me." I can stop the tears from rolling down my face as I realise everything I thought was mine and mine alone was all a lie, one that Cas made up to keep an eye on me. "Cas did this."

"No, Eva." Selena glances at the door before looking back at me, "it's not like that I swear." I pull at the wires on my chest and Selena looks like she wants to stop me but she doesn't.

"I'm leaving, you can tell Cas that if he has a problem with me he can come and see me." Pulling the needle from my arm I clap my hand where it came out to stop the blood that suddenly starts to flow.

"Eva, you had a really bad brain bleed. You should really stay here so I can keep an eye on you." I shake my head at her as I look around the hospital room looking for some clothes, I'm in a hospital gown and I don't really feel like running around with my ass hanging out. "Eva please, the person who hurt you is still out there."

"I know who hurt me, I deserved what was done to me." I have my back to Selena so I don't see her come closer to me, I turn to look at her as she places a hand on my arm in a comforting gesture.

"No one deserves what they did to you." I shake her off and stand up from the bed, my legs are shaky but I push myself to ignore it.

"You don't know the things I've done," spotting a shirt hanging on one of the chairs I slowly shuffle over to it and pull it onto my shoulders. It must be a man's shirt because the smells coming from it are all masculine, it also comes down to my knees. "I'm leaving, don't try to stop me."

66.58%

|||

11:29

O

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 11.

288 (Vouchers

Opening the door to the room I turn left and almost cry in relief as I see Eric sitting in a blue chair.

“You shouldn’t be up.” He jumps up and runs over to me, he wraps his arms around me just before I lose the strength in my legs. “Come on, back to bed.”

“No, I need to get out of here.” Eric looks like he wants to argue with me but as a door opens behind me he just nods his head.

“Yeah, alright. Come on, I’ll get you someplace safe.” I don’t know if I can trust Eric, he is a rogue after all but at least he hasn’t lied to me like Cas and Selena. Wrapping my arms around Eric’s neck I let him carry me out of the hospital, he might be a rogue but then again so am

I.

90.90%

Search the **Find_** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Chapter 179

Chapter 179

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 12.

☆Eva☆

288 Vouchers

“Where are you taking me?” It’s not until I was sitting in Eric’s truck that I realised he has no idea where I live. I know I shouldn’t want to go back to Jeremy but I have nowhere else to go and I just know that if I don’t go back the punishment when he catches me will be worse.

“I have a small cabin just on the edge of town. I’ll take you there.” Eric stops at a traffic light on main street and I seriously consider tucking and rolling from the truck.

“Take me home, I live on Wilkshire Road.” Apparently I’m making all kinds of great decisions today, leaving a hospital while still in pain. Check. Telling a random rogue where I live, double check. Eric looks at me with a perplexed expression before he nods his head and puts his foot down sending the truck forward.

It isn’t until the turn off to mine and Jeremy’s home that the panic starts to rise up within me. I’m not ready to take another punishment, I can feel the pain still within me, I’ve not finished healing from what Cyrus did to me. My chest hurts with every breath, my head is pounding a drum and for some reason my left eye hurts like someone is trying to stick a knife into it. I expect Eric to ask me which house but instead he pulls into a dirt road and stops the truck, taking the keys from the ignition he turns to me. His soft hazel eyes pierce me as he furrows his brow and shakes his head.

“Make me understand why you would go back to him.” He tilts his head to the side a little like he’s trying to read my mind, “it was him

0.00%

III

O

11290

His Rogue Omega Chapter 12.

288 Vouchers

right? The human you live with, he’s the one who did this?” I don’t answer him, instead I look down at my hands and pull the chequered shirt further along my thighs. “I know how he’s doing it,” Eric leans forward, placing his nose inches from my hair he sniffs. “I can barely sense your wolf so I understand how he’s able to hurt you like this but you’re a smart girl Eva, why let him?”

“You don’t know me.” I appreciate Eric’s help in getting me away from the hospital and Selena but the truth is I barely know the man.

“Maybe not but I’m a pretty good judge of character. And I also know that there is nothing a woman can do to be subjected to this kind of abuse from someone who claims to love them.” Eric tries to put his hand on top of mine but I flinch away from him. I don’t want to be touched right now and especially not by a man who thinks he knows me so well.

“I deserve what he does to me, I asked for it.” Eric just looks at me with sad eyes, he shakes his head and waves his hand in an up and down motion.

“You asked for this? That female shifter had you in a medically induced coma for four fucking days because of a bleed on your brain. It took your wolf three days to fix the minor damage that man did to you.” Eric slams his hands down on the steering wheel, I jump a little as it creaks under his weight.

“Why do you even care? I barely know you, you certainly don’t know me.” Slowly I feel for the door handle, once I feel the cold metal in my fingers I pull it. The door opens making me tumble from the truck, Eric doesn’t move he just watches me stand up and brush the dirt from me.

“Everyone needs someone Eva, I’m going to start marking the way to my cabin. If you need a place to go just follow my scent.” I don’t say anything as Eric starts up his truck, leans over and pulls the passenger

20.03%

O

<

11:29

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 12.

door closed and drives away, leaving me watching after him.

18 288 Vouchers

It isn’t until Eric’s truck is totally out of view that I realise I’m standing in the middle of a dirt road in nothing but a hospital gown and a man’s chequered shirt. I know which way is home but I can’t seem to make my feet move in that direction.

‘Behind you.’ I look to my left but I can’t see who spoke, as far as I can tell I’m alone. Spinning in a circle I get the distinct impression I’m not alone, I can practically feel the eyes on me.

“I know someone is there, come out.” Although I try to sound brave but my voice comes out all shaky, I take a quick step back as a massive slate grey wolf steps out just to the right of me. A quick sniff tells me this is no ordinary wolf, it’s a shifter and going off the smell of soft leather and sea salt tells me that the slate grey wolf with yellow and grey eyes is Cas.

“Why are you here? Being your wolf is going to make this pretty one sided.” I cross my arms over my chest, I don’t know where my bravery has come from but I’m getting kind of tired of being a victim.

The wolf just stares at me for a minute before he starts to vibrate and then I hear the sound of bones clicking just before Cas is standing before me. Completely n*ked.

“Oh.” Turning my back I try to block the image of Cas n*ked and sweating from my mind.

“Why didn’t you go with him?” Cas’s n*kedness doesn’t seem to bother him as he immediately starts to question me.

“Why would I? I don’t know him.” I keep my back to him and look at a tree just in front of me instead.

43.58%

11:29

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 12.

288 Vouchers

“He could have taken you away, I had no idea what that human was doing to you.” I feel him take a step closer to me so I quickly spin around and hold up my hands. I don’t know why but I seriously don’t want this Alpha’s hands on me while he’s n*ked.

“I don’t need protection but then again you have had eyes on me for a while now right? Nice work on Selena, she’s an amazing liar.” I think it’s safe to say I’m feeling a little salty about my only friend turning out to be someone who was made to spy on me.

“I’m sorry about Selena, at first I had no idea who the rogue was. When I found out it was you, I wanted to make sure you were safe.” I can’t stop the hysterical laugh that barks from my mouth.

“Safe? You lied to me and filled my life with lies and for what? If you thought I was that much of a problem you would have chased me away like any other rogue.” Cas snarls at me so I slam my mouth closed, it seems I’ve pushed him too far.

“I do what I do because I know not all rogues are bad. If I was any other Alpha you and Eric would already be run out of this town, instead I’m letting the both of you live your lives.” I start to speak but Cas has me stopping with another angry snarl, “Now things have changed. I didn’t realise how repressed your wolf was, if she can’t help you then I will. You can’t be a rogue without a wolf to protect you, hell a damn human almost beat you to death.”

“I don’t need your protection, I’m fine on my own. I’m right where I’m supposed to be.” I try to sound strong but there is a pressure pushing down on my shoulders, it’s begging me to kneel, to submit but I refuse. Shaking my head I try to make the presence move

but instead it just pushes harder, Cas is gritting his teeth as another snarl leaves his mouth.

“Why won’t you submit?” He sounds almost proud that I won’t bend to

63.88%

||| SEAR*ch on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

11 29

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 12.

288 Vouchers

his will, “you need to come with me. Eva, please. You can’t go back to him.”

Taking a few steps back I keep my eyes on Ca s’s chocolate brown ones, shaking my head I make it clear that I’m not going with him.

“I’m not going back to him and I’m not coming with you.” I wasn’t aware I had made the decision to leave until right this very second, if I can’t be punished for what I did then I’ll impose my own prison on myself.

“You’ll go to the rogue?” I shake my head again as I feel the leaves crush beneath my feet.

“Just leave me alone.” I turn my back on Cas, barefoot and barely dressed I run into the trees. I don’t look back to see if he’s following me, I just run as fast as my legs will take me. I keep running until I can’t run anymore, I can’t hear the cars on the road anymore and I can’t sense anyone around me. Seeing a small cave I carefully crawl into it and curl myself into a ball, crying as I watch the sun start to rise through the trees.

87 53%

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 180

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 13.

Cas

288 Vouchers

Eva is running towards the Pack, through the forest. Get eyes on her but don't approach.' I send a message to Rowan over the Pack link, Storm is begging me to chase after Eva but I know now is not the time. She's shaken and I think she's realising that the man she has been with is no good for her. It can be alarming to any woman to come to this conclusion, particularly one who has been treated like trash all of her life.

'And you?' I'm already letting Storm push his way forward as Rowan speaks over the Pack link.

'I'm going rogue hunting.' Shutting the link down I focus on my b*dy changing into Storm, some shifters hate this process and feel nothing but pain. Not me though, me and Storm are one thanks to my father, each time he beat me or locked me up Storm would be there. He's healed me through some horrific wounds and kept me company during my lonelier nights. Changing into Storm is just as easy as taking my shoes off at the end of a long day.

As soon as Storm is back on four paws he starts to sniff at the ground, it doesn't take long before he has Eric's scent. It's weak thanks to him being in the truck but Storm captures it enough that he races off through the trees, the complete opposite way to Eva. He told Eva he was at the edge of town and given that I haven't scented him around the Pack land it means he's on the other side of the town to us. Sitting back I give Storm full control, he guides us through the trees dodging trunks and rocks, sailing over small rivers, never does he lose Eric's

0.00%

11.30

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 13.

288 Nouchers

scent or get us seen. Storm is a master at tracking thanks to a wolf I met in Thailand when I was eighteen, he taught me everything I could ever need to know about tracking

and Storm soaked it up. When I left the Pack, my parents thought I would go rabid without a Pack, instead I hunted down powerful Alpha's and learned everything I could from each one.

"There.' Storm skids to a halt and nudges himself low into a bush, ahead of us is a small cabin and from the smell surrounding it. Eric is the only one here. I don't see any lights on in the cabin but I can make out a shadow sitting on the porch.

"Might as well come out Alpha Cas, I know you're there." He's not shouting but I hear him clear as day, "there are some pants to your left."

'Might be a trap." I take Storm's warning but I do need to speak with this rogue and normally when you're planning on killing someone you don't dress them first.

'It will be fine.' I pull Storm back much to his irritation, once I'm standing on my own two feet I walk slightly to my left and see some grey jogging bottoms hanging from the branch of a tree. Giving them a quick sniff I can tell they are clean, so I slide them up my long legs. Thankfully Eric seems to be as gifted as me in the height department so they fit rather well. Once I'm somewhat covered I start the walk from the trees up to his cabin. I'm not a complete fool though, I keep my senses on the alert for any surprises or hidden people.

Once I am within a few feet of the cabin I can see Eric is sitting in a wooden chair eating what smells like a BLT. For a second I just stand and look at him, for a rogue he looks pretty clean and relaxed. His dark hair had this just ruffled look that I always try to get with mine but never quite reach. His hazel eyes are warm and welcoming, sniffing I

23.11%

11:30

|||

O

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 13.

288 Vouchers Search the FindNovel.net website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

can smell the Alpha surrounding him. This man might be a rogue but he was Pack at some point recently.

“Have a seat.” I shake my head and cross my arms over my bare chest, “are you here about your mate?” His voice is like smooth caramel and I’m pretty sure it has a slight Texan twang to it.

“How did you know she was mine?” I’m instantly on the defence, I can count on one hand how many people know Eva is my fated mate.

“You have Pack watching her constantly and from what I understand of Everfur that’s not normal behaviour. At least not of your father’s,” it’s odd that Eric has heard of us, most rogues don’t care about Packs and what they do. “Was easy to put together once I saw your patrols.”

“You’re not a normal rogue but you aren’t Pack or you would have come to me.” Eric shakes his head as he takes a bite from his

sandwich.

“Not a rogue, well I guess I am now. Honestly I didn’t come and declare myself because I thought your father was still in power and I have no time for people like him.” I’ve not heard of any Packs

disbanding or Alpha’s being beaten in a challenge, so I have to admit I’m curious about who he is. Taking the last few steps up his porch I sit myself in the chair opposite him.

“Where you from?” I accept the beer Eric holds out to me but I don’t drink from it, I want a clear head this evening and I prefer whiskey.

“Doesn’t matter anymore, I live here now.” I look around and from what I can see in the dark he’s isolated himself away from everyone and anyone.

“You’re pretty close to my Pack, I could see that as a threat.” He doesn’t look shocked, more like he knew what I would say which leads me to believe he is in fact an Alpha. “Another Alpha moves in so close, it

49.91%

|||

11:30

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 13.

could be a challenge.”

“There is no challenge, I just want to be left alone.” Now that I’m closer to him I can see the bags under his eyes and the stress his face holds, something is weighing on this Alpha, that much is clear.

“Do I need to warn you about the consequences of pursuing my mate?” I lean forward so he can see how serious I am about Eva, I can let it slide the disrespect of not coming to see me but I won’t allow him to try and steal my mate.

“Trust me, I have no desire to steal your mate. At first I was intrigued about why she was unclaimed and then I was concerned when I could barely smell her wolf.” He sips at his beer but when I don’t offer an explanation he continues, “you know her human mate is beating her, right?” I clenched my hands together as he confirms what me and Selena suspected when she first came to the hospital.

“I do now, I didn’t before this though. I thought she was happy where she was.” Eric nods his head at me before draining his beer.

“Did she go back?” I shake my head at his as I run my hand through my hair.

“She ran into the forest, I have my Head Warrior looking for her now. I just wanted to come and see you before I join him.” Eric looks over at the trees as I speak, he looks almost annoyed.

“It’s going to rain tonight, with no wolf to protect her it’s going to be miserable.” I look up at the sky as he speaks and see the grey clouds are indeed rolling in. “I’ll keep my eyes open for her and shout if she comes this way.”

“I appreciate that,” I jump up from the chair and walk down the porch. “Nice meeting you Eric.” I don’t hear his response as I let Storm take back over so we can go and hunt down Eva.

75.26%

||

O

Search the **Find novel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 181

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 14.

Eva

288 Vouchers

'Well this was a fantastic idea. The middle of November and you run off into the damn forest in nothing but a hospital gown and a man's shirt.' The thought keeps rolling around in my head as I curl myself tighter into a ball, I'm trying to protect myself against the territorial rain coming down but it's no use. The ground below me is soggy and rain is starting to puddle on the forest floor, no matter how hard I try I can't get warm. I can't remember a time I've ever wished for a wolf more in my life, at least with fur I would be warm.

"Eva?" hearing someone shout my name I try to lift myself up but it's like my b*dy just doesn't want to do what I'm telling it to. "Eva. There you are, I swear you smell the earth itself." I feel hands curl under my b*dy as I'm pulled from the forest floor, sniffing all I can smell is rain water, dirt and trees. Cracking my eyes open a little I see Eric looking down at me, his hazel eyes filled with concern as he looks down at me. "Taking you back to my cabin." Those six words fill me with dread and with an energy I didn't know I had, wriggling in his grasp I try to get him to put me down.

"No, please. I don't want to." It's taken everything I have to not go back to Jeremy and even more to refuse Cas of his offer, I can't just let Eric scoop me up and carry me off.

"You can't stay out here Eva, stop struggling." His hands become tighter on me as a growling sounds all around my little cave, for a second I think it's Eric but then it gets louder and much stronger than a human throat can manage. "Oh, now you show up. Four fucking days

0.00%

|||

O

11 30

r

His Rogue Omega Chapter 14.

1288 Vouchers

in the pouring rain and now you show up.” I try to look around Erie to see who he’s talking to but he’s got me in such a strong hold that I can’t move, even if my body would let me.

“I suggest you put her down before my Alpha decides to attack.” I don’t know this second voice but from what he says I think he might be part of Cas and Selena’s Pack.

“I ain’t doing shit, your Pack had its chance to look after her and you failed.” The growling starts up again, Eric turns us so quickly that the pain that has been teasing my stomach turns into a full on stabbing pain.

“This is your last warning, Storm won’t allow you to hold her against her will much longer.” Opening my eyes a little I see the same slate grey wolf that stepped out of the trees that day Eric left me on the dirt road. Something in the back of my mind is telling me that I know this wolf but it takes me a minute to remember it’s Cas. Suddenly his offer of protection doesn’t seem so bad when compared with Jeremy and a rogue I barely know.

“Cas.” his name comes out a little slurred, it kind of sounds like I’ve been drinking which can’t be right because I can’t even remember the last time I ate let alone drank.

“There, she’s made her choice, now hand her over.” I can’t really see the man who’s standing next to Cas’s wolf but I can make out that he’s tall, maybe even as tall as Cas himself.

I start to wriggle against Eric’s hold as the man starts to walk closer to us with his arms out, I don’t know who he is and I certainly don’t want his hands on me.

“Stop Rowan.” Cas is suddenly in front of Eric, they stare at each other for a long time before I’m being pressed into Cas’s naked chest.

2354%

O

11:30

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 14.

288 Vouchers

“Last chance Alpha.” I feel Cas’s chest vibrate against my face as he turns and walks us out of the cave. My head rolls around as he walks us through trees and away from

my little cave. I don't see where Eric goes but I can feel the presence of the other man walking next to us.

"Back to the Pack?" The man asks as I lay my head against Cas's shoulder and breathe in his scent, my nose is instantly filled with sea salt and soft leather.

"Yeah, run ahead and get the Packhouse cleared out. Make sure Selena is there to look Eva over, she has a temperature and I'm pretty sure she has an infection." I don't hear what the man says in response, Cas keeps walking as the cracking of bones fills the silent night just before I feel something speed past us.

I'm not sure how long it's been but I open my eyes to feel myself being placed into a leather seat. It isn't until the light above me comes on that I realise I'm inside of a car.

"Cas?" I can't feel his hands on me so I try to sit up but again my body just won't listen to what I want it to do.

"Stay still, Angel. I'm going to get you home and then Selena will check you over." It takes a moment for his words to penetrate through to my brain but when they do I just become more confused.

"Home?" I feel the car rumble to life under me just before we start to move forward.

"Back to my Pack, just until you're well." I feel his hand run over my forehead before he sighs and the car starts to move faster, "you're burning up and I can practically hear your stomach growling. Running from me wasn't a smart idea."

"No more pain." I try to tell him that I just want the pain to stop when I rejected his offer but it doesn't come out right. Everything is getting

47.87% Search the FindNovel.net website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

III

O

r

11 30

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 14.

288 Vouchers

jumbled up in my head, it's like I can barely thread more than a few words together in my brain.

"Just rest, Eva. No one is hurting you, we will be at the Packhouse soon." I don't know why right now but the idea of being in a Packhouse feels me with a ball of dread that just sits in my stomach. I try to keep my eyes open so I can see where Cas is taking me but it isn't long before I feel my b*dy start to betray me again and my eyes close without my permission.

"Get her on the bed." The female voice penetrates the fog clouding my brain just as I feel a softness below me. "She stinks of infection, why did you leave her out there so long." The hands on my skin feel soft as they start to move the sleeves of the shirt I'm wearing up.

"It wasn't by choice, I didn't realise it was this bad until the wind changed and brought her scent to us." The hand that lands on my head isn't soft at all but it is calming, I lean into the touch, even without being able to open my eyes I know it's Cas.

"Cas, please." I'm not sure what I'm begging for but I try to move closer to him, I curse my b*dy as I just lay there unable to even lift my head.

"It's alright, Angel. Selena is just checking you over." I feel a pressure around me and suddenly I'm covered in the most soothing feeling I've ever felt in my life. I hear some sigh and I think it might have come from me because Cas chuckles while running his hand through my

hair.

"That's good Cas, keep doing that. Keep her calm, Eva this is going to put you to sleep for a little bit." I feel a sharp pain that has me gasping before something warm starts working its way up my arm, "when you wake up you're going to feel much better." I try to tell Selena that she need not bother, I don't deserve to feel better. I deserve everything that

72.66%

O

11 30

His Rogue Omega Chapter 14.

288 Vouchers

has happened to me but before I can the warmth takes over my b*dy and I drift off into the darkness.

98.51%

||

O

Search the **findNOvel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 182

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 15.

Cas☆

288 Vouchers

I'm not sure if it's my bedroom door being banged open or my mother screaming, that wakes me up. Whichever it is, I'm instantly up and in front of my bed protecting Eva from the threat.

"You can't be serious, you drop Vince as Beta, kick him out of the Packhouse and now you have a rogue in your bed?" My mother's voice is so loud that I turn slightly to check she hasn't woken Eva. Thankfully she's still laid in the middle of my bed completely knocked out from what Selena gave her. Growling low I grab my mother's arm and drag her from my bedroom, carefully I close the door behind me careful not to create more noise.

"Who do you think you are? Barging into my room like that." My mother whimpers a little as my Alpha aura starts to pulse around me, "what I do is no business of yours."

In my anger I realise I've pushed my aura out a little too much so I try to grab it back a bit.

"I raised you better than this, deklas sing your Uncle and bringing rogues into the Pack. This isn't how you were raised!" My mother is pointing her finger at me as she sways on the spot, one sniff and I know instantly she's been at the gin before coming down here.

“You didn’t raise me, you nursed a bottle of gin while my Alpha beat the shi t out of me.” Her dull brown eyes widen as I shout back at her, I think I’ve actually shocked her by not falling in line.

0.00%

O

11:30

His Rogue Omega Chapter 15

à

1288 (Vouchers

“I did the best that I could but regardless of the past, you can’t just bring a rogue into the Packhouse.” Growling I run a hand over my face, I’m exhausted after running the Pack by day and watching Eva by night. The last thing I need is my mother in my face about my choices.

“She stays, simple as that. Now go away so I can get some sleep.” Turning away from her I’m stopped by her hand on my forearm, it takes everything I have not to beat her off me. Her very touch makes my skin crawl with revulsion, if I had a valid reason to do so, she would have been banished the second I took over as Alpha,

“Martha?” The door at the top of the stairs opens as Rowan shouts for my mother.

“She’s down here.” I talk to Rowan but I keep my eyes locked with my mother as I push her hand from me.

“S hit.” I hear Rowan’s footsteps on the stairs just a second before I see him, “Martha I told you not to come down here.” His face is red with anger as he finishes his descent into the basement and walks over to us. “I’m sorry Alpha, I told her not to come down, I only stepped away to ensure Selena got to bed alright.” I just nod my head at Rowan as he hands me a red folder, it’s thick with paper, I take it from him

intrigued.

“Is this what I asked for?” Rowan just nods his head at me as he pulls my mother towards the stairs, “once she’s secure come down to my office.” Sleep forgotten about, I push the door next to my bedroom open and enter my office, sitting down in my desk chair I open the file. A few days ago I asked Rowan to find out everything he could about the rogue hanging around Eva, other than his name he couldn’t find anything. Apparently that has changed considering the information sitting before me.

'You need to call the Elders, you can't let this guy run around

22.11%

11 31

His Rogue Omega Chapter 15.

288 Vouchers

unchecked.' I hum in agreement with Storm, as I start reading about Eric the Alpha of The Onyxfur Pack. Apparently Alpha Eric killed his brother, Beta and Head Warrior before fleeing from his Pack, he left the Pack dripping in the blood of those who trusted him and fled to America. For an English Alpha to make it this far he must have some big connections, I'm also surprised the Elders haven't found him yet.

"Interesting read, right?" I nod my head at Rowan as I flick the page to see a picture of a small blonde woman, the page tells me this is Lisa, Luna of The Onyxfur Pack.

"I could smell that he wasn't a normal rogue but I didn't expect this. We need to call the Elders, I can't have a shifter like this anywhere near our land." Closing the file I open my desk drawer and drop it inside as I lift a fresh bottle of Jameson out, holding up to Rowan I silently ask if he wants a drink.

"Not for me, given what's in that file I have patrols set up on the borders." Unscrewing the bottle I can't help but think again how good Rowan would be as my Beta, he does everything without asking if I don't know it's needed. "I figured with Eva here and what's in that file we should take precautions."

"I agree, make sure you rotate out often. I don't want the warriors getting tired and sloppy. In the morning I will call the Elders and Alpha Darryl, he might be able to give us more information on Eric." If anyone knows about Packs and any threats coming for us then it will be Darryl, he's the oldest Alpha in America and he has the biggest Pack. If we still had royalty then many think he would be our King.

"How is she?" I don't have to ask who Rowan is talking about, he's looking at the wall separating us from Eva as if he can see her.

"She hasn't woken up yet, Selena seems to think she will be out for a few days." I down my drink and pour myself another one, "when Eric

5040%

|||

1131

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 15.

288 (Vouchers

took her from the hospital she was still in a really bad way and being out in the forest for days did not help.”

“Why is her wolf not healing her? I can smell her more now than I could when we first spotted her but she’s still so distant.” Rolling my head back on my shoulders I try to decide how much of Eva’s past to tell Rowan.

‘He’s trustworthy.’ I agree with Storm, I trust Rowan so I think I can trust him with the truth.

“How much do you know of The Shalamayne?” Rowan’s eyebrows scrunch together as he looks at me, confusion is written all over his face.

“That old ghost story? I remember it from when I was a pup but

honestly couldn’t tell you it word for word.” Chuckling a little I open my desk drawer and pull out a second glass, placing it on the table in front of him. I quickly pour two fresh glasses of Jameson.

“It’s not a ghost story, you’re going to need this.” I push the glass towards him as I sit back and get ready to tell my Head Warrior how my mate has lived her life. “What I’m going to tell you is going to piss you off but I need you to keep a level head and know I would never put this Pack in any kind of danger. Eva’s past is dark and not one that I would wish on anyone, I don’t know it all but I know enough.”

80.24% search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

O

Search the **FindNovel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 183

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 16.

Cas☆

288 Vouchers

“So if it’s not a ghost story what is it?” Rowan’s eyes have a healthy dose of scepticism in them, if I hadn’t seen it for myself I would probably not believe it either.

“They’re a religious hate group, they move from place to place and take pups from Packs they feel are becoming too strong. They arrest and detain shifters that they feel are a threat to humanity and they do it all in the name of God.” I can’t stop my distaste from bleeding into my words, to say I have a particular hatred for these people is an understatement.

“So a small group of God worshipping humans are punishing shifters?” He makes it sound so simple but I know it’s not so I just shake my head and down my drink before refilling my glass.

“Not so small, when Swiftmane faced them that was just a small group and they managed to take Fraction’s Beta and mate, his pup was even kidnapped.” I don’t know why but I can’t bring myself to say Eva took

pup, I still strongly believe that if she had been given the choice she wouldn’t have done it.,

the

“Humans managed all that? I think I remember them reaching out to your father for help but he refused, something about the babysitter running off with the pup.” Of course Rowan would know about it, when my father was approached and he refused to help it spread to the warriors like wildfire. They weren’t happy about leaving another Pack to fend for themselves which is why I took a handful with me and went anyway. Rowan would have been with me but he was away visiting his

0.00%

O

14:21

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 16.

288 (Vouchers

sick mother at Grey Pack at the time.

“Yeah well it turns out it was The Shalamayne, they felt Fraction and Anna were getting too big, having too many children.” Rowan scoffs like it’s the most ridiculous thing he’s ever heard, “they thought he was building up an army, they seem to think they are protecting humanity from abominations like us.”

“Why are ars eholes always using G od to justify their actions, like stealing a pup from its loving parents is G od’s plan. Tell you what, give me the Moon Goddess anyday.” Rowan sips at his drink before looking at the wall separating my office from my bedroom, “you said this was about Eva’s wolf.”

“Yeah, when they take the pups they don’t just get rid of them. They take them while they are young enough to be twisted into their mind frame, they teach them that being a shifter is wrong.” A growl leaves Rowan’s throat, I ignore him because as angry as he is about pups being kidnapped and controlled it’s going to be nothing compared to what happens in the long term. “From what I understand they force the male and females to mate to create new shifters, I believe the idea is they want a shifter army they can control and use to wipe us out.”

“How do they control the shifters though? I mean Fraction’s Beta is a fully grown man, there is no way they overpowered him.” I nod my head in agreement, under normal circumstances they wouldn’t be able to overpower James but these people aren’t normal.

“They use these little tracking bullets, once inside of a shifter it stops them from being able to shift or even communicate with their shift. James told me it was like his link to his wolf was just gone, like it was never there, I think that’s what happened to Eva.” Rowan’s eyes go wide as he starts to put everything together.

2017%

=

111

Γ

14:21

His Rogue Omega Chapter 16.

288 (Vouchers

“Eva was with The Shalamayne? Wait, don’t tell me you brought a damn pupnapper into our Pack?” He’s rightfully angry now so I don’t scold him for slamming his hands on the desk.

“She did and she is, trust me, if she had a choice she wouldn’t have done it. The Shalamaye messed with her head, gave her no choice and for her entire life her wolf has been kept from her.” I don’t expect Rowan to understand, he doesn’t know Eva or anything about her, not that I know much more. “I think she just needs a Pack at her back, people to guide her and help her. Maybe if she is around other shifters her wolf will emerge, that’s how it happens when pups are young. It’s the Pack that helps them get in touch with their wolf.”

Rowan gets up from his chair and starts running his hands through his hair, for a long time he’s quite and I just sit in my chair drinking my whiskey and allow him the time to process everything I’ve told him.

“So not only do I have to worry about Eva potentially still working for The Shalamayne, I have the actual Shalamayne, a rogue murderous Alpha and a drug situation.” He looks at me with wide eyes, “did I miss anything?” I just shake my head at him, I’d love to say he’s overreacting but things really are at boiling point at the moment.

“And all within the first year of being Alpha, any chance you want to swap roles?” My joke is met with a stoney stare from Rowan, apparently he didn’t find it funny.

“You need a Beta and I need to get the warriors in shape, I’ll start training tomorrow.” Rowan drops himself back in his chair, “actually that might be a good idea for Eva.”

“What? Warrior training? I don’t think so.” I scoff at him as I pour us both a fresh glass of Jameson.

43.51%

14:21

|||

O

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 16.

288 Vouchers

“No not warrior training but self defence training, it could trigger her wolf. Sort of a fight or flight thing, nothing too intense just stuff to get the blood pumping and her wolf active.” I have to admit Rowan has a good point, it could work but I don't know how I feel about Eva training with a random warrior or even Rowan himself.

“I'll train her, I don't know how she will feel about a man coming at her with fists.” Rowan's face falls as if he's just realising what he suggested and how it could affect Eva.

“Alright, let me know if you need some help. Thanks to this,” Rowan puts the empty glass on my desk, “I'm going to find someone to cover me and get some sleep. Shout if you need me.” He leaves the office muttering about s hit hitting the fan and us not being ready, I can't say I disagree. My father might have established the Everfur Pack a long time ago but the shifters here are undisciplined and aren't ready for a big fight should it come our way.

'It's our job to get them ready,' again I can't help but agree with Storm, downing the last of my drink I drop the glass onto my desk before getting up and heading to bed. It's just gone three in the morning so I figure I can get a few hours before Selena comes down to check on Eva. Walking into my bedroom I marvel at Eva laid in the bed, her black hair spread across my silk sheets and her pale skin looks almost like it's glowing against the black colour. I've always had a thing for monochrome colours but when I picked these bed sheets I had Eva's hair in my head and these reminded me of the silkiness and colour Sitting down in the chair across from the bed I can't help but think I got the colour exactly right, she looks like a peaceful sleeping beauty laid there.

'I wonder how she ended up with a human who beats her,' I have to admit it's a thought that has crossed my mind. I know Eva was in a dark place when Fraction banished her from his Pack but I have no

66.02%

O Search The FindNØVEL.NET website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

14.21

91.46%

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 16.

288 Vouchers

idea how someone like that can go to being in a relationship with a man who beats her and makes her work in a strip club. Now matter how I try to spin it, the maths just doesn't add up.

'We just have to make sure she doesn't go back, make her understand that she's worth more than being someone's punching bag.' I can feel Storm agreeing with me as I watch Eva for another minute before closing my eyes and settling into the chair, I need to sleep but with her laid across from me I don't know how much I'm actually going to get. I just have to placate myself with the fact that soon enough I will be laid next to her, holding her while she sleeps.

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 184

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 17.

☆ Eva☆

288 Vouchers

Waking up I'm hit with a wave of confusion, the black silk sheet bed I'm laid on is much bigger than I'm used to. The four posters engraved with tiny wolves on each corner are ones I'm almost sure I've seen before but at the same time I can't quite place where I've seen them. The sheets below me smell like soft leather and sea salt and there is this calming feeling settling around me which tells me I'm safe and exactly where I'm supposed to be. I instantly distrust it. The last time I felt safe and like I belonged I ended up in a messy and painful

situation, one thing is for sure, my gut instinct can not be trusted. If my b*dy is telling me I'm safe it must mean I'm actually in danger and

Recharge successful! need to get moving.

it

Sitting up I try to get my bearings but nothing from the dark wooden floor to the sofa looking armchair tells me where I am. I try to block out my heart beating wildly in my ears so I can hear if anyone is nearby, it's either devoid of people outside of this room or my hearing is worse than I thought. I will be the first to admit that since getting to Seattle my shifter instincts have worsened, almost like not being around other shifters have somehow dampened what shift abilities I did have. While sitting and listening I take a mental stock of my b*dy, my leg still hurts a little but otherwise I feel better than I

have since I left the hospital with Eric. Lifting the comforter off me I notice I am no longer in the hospital gown and shirt, I'm now wearing some pink sleep shorts and a baggy white t-shirt, the thought of someone dressing me makes me feel uneasy but given my situation I push it to the back of my mind and slide from the bed.

0.00%

14:22

|||

O

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 17.

1288 iVouchers

'I think we should stay here.' The voice comes so suddenly that I spin around expecting to see someone behind me but all that is there is a red painted wall.

"Hello?" My voice sounds shaky and croaky like I haven't used it for a while, I wonder how long I've been laying in bed.

'No need to shout, I'm right here. I don't think you should leave, I think we are safe here.' doing yet another spin on the spot I determine I am in fact alone, which can mean only one thing, I have officially lost my mind. I should really get out of here before I hurt someone without meaning to.

Footsteps outside of the door make me stop and look at the door with wide eyes, someone is heading this way and besides under the bed I am seriously lacking in hiding spots right now. Too late I spot another door opposite me, I'll never get to it though because the main door is now opening.

"Tell Cas, Eva is awake." The door opens fully to show Selena in her medical clothes and her blonde hair pulled back in a blonde hair tie. "Eva, you should really still be in bed." I honestly have no idea what I should say to her so I just stand there in my ridiculously short sleep shorts and stare at her. It seems like only ten minutes ago we were joking in the diner and she was still my only friend, now here she is all but confirming I'm in the one place I swore I would never go.

"I'm on Pack land?" It comes out as a question but I already know the answer, after everything that happened at Swiftmane and with Fraction banishing me I swore to myself that I would never again risk being anywhere near a Pack

“Sure are, hope on the bed for me and I’ll check you over.” Selena drops a big dark blue leather medical bag on the bed but instead of getting on the bed I take a step back from her shaking my head.

22.12%

||

14:22

O

<

Hogue Comega Chapter 17

288 Vouchers

“Goddess, Eva.” The look that ghosts over her face looks almost like pain, “no one is going to hurt you. Please I just want to check you over now you are awake.”

“And then I can leave?” Selena doesn’t answer me, she just nods her head which makes me think I’m not getting out of this room anytime

soon.

‘Could be worse, could be a cold damp cell. Least you’re not stuck in the basement of a Pack house.’ I ignore the inner voice of my craziness and carefully sit on the very edge of the bed, I’m barely perched on it so if something happens I don’t like I can flee with a second’s notice.

“Alright, let’s check your eyes first.” Selena rummages around in her bag and comes out with a tiny flashlight that she clicks on and off a few times before walking from the end of the bed to me. “Just follow the light with your eyes,” it’s bright as hell but I do as she asks. “Good, any headaches?” I just shake my head at her as she clicks the light off with her manicured thumb nail. I have to wonder how a shifter and doctor manages to keep such nice nails. “Alright, any pain? How about the leg? It wasn’t fully healed when you left the hospital.”

“Hurts a little.” I keep my reply short and clipped, Selena’s blue eyes go wide for a second as she picks up on the malice in my voice. It’s not my fault, I can’t seem to contain the anger I feel towards her.

“Alright, can I have a look?” She actually looks uncomfortable, a small part of me hopes it’s shame over her betrayal she’s feeling, another part of me wants to comfort her but I stomp that down quickly. I just shrug my shoulders at her before she sighs a little and

drops to her knees and starts to carefully squeeze the muscle around my left calf. I keep my eyes on the wall above her head but I can't keep the hiss of pain from leaving my lips as she cups the heel of my foot and starts to rotate my foot. "Okay, I think you should stay off this for a bit. It will give your wolf more time to heal it."

45274

[11

O

14:22

His Rogue Omega Chapter

288 Vouchers

"No wolf." I know she wants me to say more as she raises from the floor but I keep my responses short on purpose, if I start rambling I think I might actually swing for her and the last thing I want is to physically hurt someone on Packland.

"You have a wolf Eva," Selena shakes her head as she walks back over to her bag and picks it up. "No one without a wolf could recover from what you have in less than a week. When you came into the hospital I thought we might lose you, I've never seen anyone in that condition actually that's a lie." Selena sighs before putting her bag back on the bed. "I had a patient once who rolled his car on the freeway, his back tire blew out and he rolled over four lanes, causing a twenty car pile up. His wounds rivalled yours, the only difference is another person created your wounds." Selena wipes a tear from her face as she looks me dead in the eye, "I thought my friend was gone. I did everything I could to help you but your wolf did the majority of the work, she might be hiding or whatever but she is there."

"We aren't friends." I feel a pain pierce my chest as I say this in a low voice, right now it's how I feel though, "friends don't lie to each other."

"If that's how you feel, maybe one day you will change your mind." Personally I don't see that day coming as I don't plan on sticking around, as soon as I am able I will get out of here and I'll just run. I'm not sure where yet but I can't stay in the Pack and I certainly won't be going back to Jeremy.

I keep my eyes on the wall as Selena opens the bedroom door, I look out of the corner of my eye but I can't see anything past the door other than a cream wall and more wood flooring.

"Alpha, she's awake and cleared to see you." Selena looks back at me as she betrays me again by calling her Alpha in on me, "she needs to stay off her foot though."

70.58%

O

14.22

< Search the Find novel.net website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

His Rogue Omega Chapter 17

288 Vouchers

“Thanks Selena, I’ll be there in a second.” I shiver as I hear Cas’s voice shout back, from the sound of it he’s pretty close maybe even in the room next door.

“Stay here Eva, let us help you.” Selena offers me a small smile I think is meant to be comforting before closing the bedroom door. With Cas so close I can’t escape now, I guess I just need to bide my time, they

will have to leave me alone at some point.

94.62%

14.22

O

<

Search the **Findnovel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 185

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 18.

☆ Cas☆

288 Vouchers

I make myself wait, I listen to Selena talk to Eva and then leave up the stairs, I want nothing more than to rush to her side but I make myself stay and finish the email to Alpha Darryl. I need his opinion on how to handle the Eric situation and also if he has any insight about shifters on drugs. John Micjens has been locked in a cell for days now and he's still strung out on the drugs he's taken, Rowan has had a guard on the cells so there is no way more drugs have gotten in. John should be clean by now but Selena said it's a mix of a few different drugs and they are playing havoc on John's system. I hope Darryl has seen this before and can tell me how to fix it before more of my Pack succumbs to this new activity plaguing our streets.

Figuring I've kept Eva waiting for long enough I quickly lock my laptop before leaving my office and locking the door behind me. Sure I'm only going to be next door but if my mother can get past my Head Warrior then anyone can get down here and I'm not taking a chance with the information I have in here. Opening my bedroom door I'm instantly confused, I didn't hear Eva leave with Selena yet she's not in the room.

"Eva?" I ask as I close the door behind me, the water is running in the bathroom so I guess she had to pee. Sitting on the chair I wait for her to come out, it has to be a scary experience for her. The last time she was in a Packhouse she was kept in a small cell and made to have no contact with anyone. Sure I snuck down to see her as often as I could but if I'm honest I could have argued her case a lot harder than I did. Looking at my watch I see it's been a good ten minutes since I entered

0.00%

III

14.22

His Rogue Omega Chapter 18.

288 (Vouchers

the room, I don't like to judge but there is no way she's still using the facilities.

"Eva, you can't stay hidden in there. We need to talk." She must hear the annoyance in my voice because slowly the bathroom door opens and she walks into the room. Selena changed her out of the clothes she was in and put her in some sleep clothes, they look huge on her, not that Selena is big, Eva is just that small. Her shoulders are slumped and she's got her head down, using her hair as a shield against me and her. "No need to be shy, come and sit down." Eva slowly shuffles over to the bed and I notice how she's favouring her left foot over her right, I guess that is the one Selena was talking about.

“Why am I here Cas, I didn’t do anything wrong.” She can’t really be so clueless, moving around in the chair I try to think of how to phrase what I need to say.

“You’re not in trouble Eva, I think you will just be safer here.” It’s hard to see what she’s thinking as she curls in on herself and uses her hair to hide from me. “You needed medical attention, we kept an eye on you when you went into the forest but we didn’t realise how sick you were until the winds changed. When Eric showed up I had to make a choice, I figured you would rather be here than with a rogue.” I try to stress to her how little choice I had.

“You could have at least asked.” I smile at this, clearly she doesn’t remember what happened in the cave.

“You were completely out of it Angel. There was no way to get any sense out of you, you asked for me when Eric picked you up.” Eva’s head soots up and for a second I swear she has flecks of purple in her soft green eyes.

“I did? I asked for you?” I nod my head at her, I need her to understand that I didn’t make this decision lightly. “I can’t stay here Cas, Fraction

22.36%

14.22

≡

|||

O

<

His Rogue Omega. Chapter 18

1288 Vouchers

made sure no Pack will take me and they shouldn’t, I’m dangerous.”

“Sweetheart, your many things but dangerous is not one of them. Out of everything I have going on right now you are the least complicated one.” I’m not going to tell her everything that is happening but I need her to understand she’s not a complication to me, she’s actually the opposite.

“I highly doubt that, you don’t know what I can do.” A small shiver works its way down her spine as she curls in on herself again.

For a while we sit in silence while I wait for her to elaborate but when she doesn't I get up from the chair and walk over to the chest of drawers.

"How about you settle down for the night? Maybe you will feel more like chatting in the morning." Turning away from the drawers I notice she's moved from the bed to the corner of the room, sitting with her legs tucked into her chest she's back to using her long black hair as a shield. "I thought you might like to change into some clean sleep things." I drop the plain black t-shirt I picked out onto the bed and then walk past her and into the bathroom. Starting the shower I figure it will give her time to change and get settled before I come back into the room. Dropping my own sleep pants on the side of the sink I look into the mirror and try to see myself as she must. Sure my six foot nine height will be intimidating to her barely five foot four but then the rest of me is pretty easy going. My hair always does this weird ruffled thing that a girl once told me, made me look like I'd just got done f ucking. My eyes are a deep chocolate brown and other than the dark circles from lack of sleep I don't think they hold anything threatening. I'm not littered in tattoos or a bushy beard like Fraction. I'm not over muscled or scowl faced like Darryl, I don't see what she sees.

'And you won't, not ever. You can't know what it's like to be the small search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

46.00%

|||

O

14.22

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 18

288 Vouchers

wolf under an Alpha's boot.' I roll my eyes at Storm as I push off the sink and start to strip for my shower.

'I know what that's like all too well, it's why I want something different for her.' Storm knows my past better than anyone else but I have to agree it's definitely different for a man than a woman. I don't know if it's the world around us making violence normalised or if it's S*xist but men seem to just shake this kind of thing easier than women.

'Do they? Think. Maybe Eva just carries her pain for you to see, you still have pain, you just bury it deep down.' I roll my eyes again as I step under the warm spray of the shower and close the glass door behind me. 'Don't kid yourself, you feel the pain as much as she does. Domestic violence is the same no matter the gender, you just have Alpha in you which helps you push it down. Don't forget I know your nightmares.'

Placing my hands against the white tiles I drop my head so the hot spray can batter my back.

Storm is right, no matter how much I bury my past I can't seem to hide from it at night. I wake up covered in a cold sweat most nights terrified my father is going to come into my room and start beating me for some arbitrary reason. Not that he needed an excuse, me being born a male and one day taking over the Pack was enough to insight his anger. Staying in the shower until the water runs cold I try to think of a way to help Eva when I can't seem to help myself.

Stepping from the shower I make quick work of drying off and pulling on my sleep pants. I gave Eva my shirt so I just stay tople ss, the woman has seen me balls out n*ked after a shift so a lack of a t-shirt shouldn't scare her much. Opening the door to the bedroom I see she's curled herself back into the bed but she's perched right on the far side of the mattress and from what I can tell she's curled up in a tight ball. The shirt I left for her is still on the end of the bed which means she's still in the same clothes as before. I want nothing more than to climb into

70.98%

|||

O

<

14 22

His Rogue Omega Chapter 18

288 Nouchers

the bed and pull her into my chest, stroke her hair and promise everything is going to be alright. Instead I drop myself into my chair

and pray the nightmares don't come tonight.

97.59%

|||

Search the **Find_** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 186

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 19.

Eva☆

288 Vouchers

While waiting for Cas to fall asleep my entire b*dy is a live wire, I keep waiting for him to decide he's jumping into the bed with me but it doesn't seem to be happening. It isn't until Cas's breathing evens out that I know he's fallen asleep, laying still I wait a little longer before I make my move.

'This is wrong.' My inner crazy seems to have gone from crazy to kind of speaking sense, the thought keeps running through my mind but it's not one I'm listening to. The longer I stay here the more danger I'm putting Cas's Pack in and myself in, I didn't run into the forest to be kept under the fist of yet another man. Once I'm confident Cas is sleeping soundly I carefully peel the comforter off me and slide from the bed, I wince a little as I put weight on my left foot. Getting my teeth I force myself to stand and slowly shuffle over to the door, Cas starts to whimper so I stand still as a statue for a bit and listen as he calls out.

"Stop, I don't want to." He sounds like he's in pain and part of me wants to go over and comfort him, I stamp that part down deep and carefully open the door stepping through it.

Luck seems to be on my side because the room beyond the bedroom is clear of people but I don't see a door leading to the outside as I expected. Instead there is a small cream sofa, a television and what looks like a mini fridge. It's almost like a small lounge, something you would find in a small home and not a Pack house. Thankfully there are some stairs just off from the two doors behind me, I know from Selena

D00%

O

14:22

288 Vouchers

and Cas chatting earlier that the second door is most likely Cas's office, so I head for the stairs praying that they don't creak. It's a bit awkward climbing the stairs with a foot that doesn't like me putting weight on it but I eventually make it and push the door open onto what looks like a bigger version of the lounge I just came from. It's got cream walls and a soft carpet, there are three big leather sofas, a large television and what looks like some kind of bar. Most of the walls have floor to ceiling bookcases each filled with books, someone in the house must be big on reading.

"Well if it isn't the world's most pathetic rogue." The sounds of the female voice makes me jump as I close the basement door, turning around I see a small woman sitting in an armchair holding a glass of clear liquid. The small lamp on the table beside her is the only thing lighting up the room, I can just make out her light brown hair, brown eyes and brilliant red lipstick. "On the run are we?" Putting my back to the door I just stare at the woman sipping her drink, I don't know why but my entire body is screaming at me to run, everything is telling me this woman is bad news.

'Go back to Cas.' I try to shake off my inner crazy as it begs me to run back the way I came.

"Where's your wolf?" The woman leans forward a little revealing the swell of her breasts in her revealing top, she sniffs the air loudly like she's trying to draw in my scent. "Either the impossible has happened and I'm actually drunk or you have no wolf little girl." She tilts her glass to the side, spilling some of her drink onto the armchair before shrugging her shoulders and taking a big drink. "After a while even this stuff stops affecting you, why are you still here? Ain't no one stopping a wannabe rogue from leaving." Feeling with my hands I start to side step along the wall, never taking my eyes off the lady sitting in the chair. "That's it," she nods as if agreeing with my movement. "All the way along the hall to the kitchen, the back door will lead to a garden, follow it to the forest." I don't know why she's helping me but

18.68%

|||

O

14.22

His Rogue Omega Chapter 19

288 Vouchers

right now I couldn't care less, I just want to get out of here.

Seems the drunk lady was right because before long I am breathing in the night air while standing on what appears to be a wrap around porch. It's white wood which goes

nice with the green colour of the house. I bet it would look really nice during the day, especially in the summer with flowers blooming all over. The garden itself looks to be rather small compared to the massive one back at Swiftmane, a large portion of this garden seems to be taken up by an awful stone brick building. It looks completely out of place next to such a nicely painted house and I can't for the life of me think of what can be in there. It's not until I have hobbled my way down the steps that I realise there is a person standing in front of the brick building.

"Eva." I don't recognise the voice but it's authoritative enough to have me stopping still with one foot still on the white steps and another in the cold wet grass. Search on Gøogle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

"Over here kid," I roll my eyes at being called a kid, Cas sometimes calls me that too. Looking to the left I see another man standing next to a massive metal door, I can't see much thanks to the dark but this man is clearly a giant like Cas.

'They make them big here,' my inner crazy seems to be in awe of how tall the guys around this Pack seem to be. I haven't yet seen a single one of what I would call normal height.

"I just wanted some fresh air." I shout back lamely as I fully step onto the grass, I'm mentally calculating if I can make it to the forest before either of these guys gets to me.

"Come here, I want to show you something." I don't really have a choice, even without a bum ankle I wouldn't beat two shifters even in human form, sighing I make my way over to the man standing next to the door.

43 61%

|||

O

14:22

His Rogue Omega Chapter 19.

288 Vouchers

Once I'm standing in front of the man I'm pretty sure I've seen him before, his green eyes are sparking a memory that I can't quite grasp.

"Rowan." The man's voice is gruff but also hypnotic, something about him just instantly puts me at ease and that instantly gets my back up. Men who can relax you with just their voice are dangerous. "Come on, I want to show you who you're running from." I don't say anything as Rowan reaches behind him and opens up the massive metal

door, I expect it to squeak or at least make some kind of ominous noise. Instead it opens like any other door showing a room filled with stone walls and concrete floor, even from here I can smell the urine, blood and sweat emanating from the room.

“I don’t want to.” I know instantly that this place is filled with cells just like the basement at Swiftmane Pack, been there and done that. I have no desire to be locked behind bars again.

“Once I’m done I’ll walk you back to Ca s’s room or if you still want I’ll get you a go bag and send you off into the forest.” He smiles at me making his cheeks dimple and his green eyes shine, “and maybe some shoes.”

“Promise?” I don’t know why I trust Rowan but for some reason I really do, it’s something about how he holds himself. He’s full of confidence but not overconfident, I’m sure I’m going to regret my decision but I already know I’m going to follow him into this building.

“Promise, now shall we?” He holds the door open for me giving me the choice, nodding my head, I slowly shuffle into the bricked room.

The door closes behind us and I’m actually surprised by how well lit the room is, I can see the bars on the doors now. I was right in thinking this was home to cells, from what I can tell it holds maybe ten cells.

6481%

14.22 D

O

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 19.

288 Nouchers

“This way.” Rowan doesn’t touch me, he just points ahead of me and walks at my side, he walks me through the cells but never enters any of them. One cell has a man with blonde hair sticking to his face from the sweating rolling off him, from the smell of it he’s vomited a few times. as well. “Ignore John, he’s in here for a reason.”

“You hurt him?” I don’t understand why they would seal a Pack member away in his own vomit, he’s clearly in need of medical

attention.

“Not us, John decided to mess with drugs and it’s f ucked with his wolf. Selena is trying to figure out how to help him.” I don’t say anything as Rowan leads me round the corner to a cell sitting on its own, completely away from the others. This one is different though, there is a small bed in this one, maybe big enough for a child and there are scratches in the wall. Some look like they are from a wolf and some look like they have been made with something sharp. Stepping into the cell I reach down and trace my fingers along the name etched into the wall.

“Castiel?” I ask Rowan as I finish tracing the ‘L’.

“He prefers Cas, never was a fan of his own name.” Looking around me I’m shocked when I realise Cas has at some point spent a lot of time here.

85.52%

14.23

|||

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 187

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 20.

Eva☆

288 Vouchers

Standing in the middle of the cell I spread out both of my hands, I am able to touch both walls with my palms flat. Shocked at the size, I walk over to the small bed and sit down on it. Even at five foot four my knees come almost halfway up my chest because it’s so low to the ground.

“Why would anyone put a child in here?” I’ve seen some horrific things happen to children but I thought Pack treated their pups with love and

care.

“Cas’s father was a complicated man and he had some demons, he took those demons out on Cas.” Rowan slides his hand up the poles of the cell door, “Cas spent more time in here than he cares to admit. I was only a pup myself and my parents didn’t want to meddle. He was our Alpha and his word was law, it’s sad but most don’t question the hierarchy within a Pack.”

“What does that have to do with me?” Sure a rubbish childhood is awful but that doesn’t explain why Cas is so insistent in helping me.

“No one helped him, not one person. None of them could, going against your Alpha is treason. Those who did either got banished or randomly vanished, he had no friends and was rarely seen outside of the Pack house.” Rowan enters the cell, sliding his hands into his jean pockets he leans against the wall propping one of his feet up against it. He leans his head down, shaking it from side to side making his brown hair flop into his face. “I think part of him wants to help those who need it because no one helped him.”

0.00%

山

r

14.23

His Rogue Omega Chapter 20

288 Vouchers

“I don’t need his help though.” Rowan looks at me with a raised eyebrow.

“Really? I was the one who picked you up from the cave floor, I felt the scars on your back. I’m pretty sure no one gave you a lattice pattern at your request, Cas would have some similar scars if it wasn’t for his wolf.” Reaching behind me I feel the start of my scars, each one was laid for a reason and I remember every one.

I wouldn’t wish this kind of pain on anyone, I remember every lash and every time the whip got stuck in my skin because the wound was too deep. I wish I had a wolf to heal me but I’m not that lucky so I also had to deal with the healing process too.

“I can’t be his pet project.” Standing from the bed I brush at my bare legs, I didn’t realise how tiny the shorts were and now that I have I’m feeling a little uncomfortable. “I can’t be what he needs me to be, he wants someone he can fix and mould. I’m not that person, I shouldn’t be around others.”

“Out of all the rogues I’ve seen it’s safe to say you are the least dangerous.” I start to shake my head before he’s even finished, “Cas knows what evil is, he’s seen it and faced it daily. He doesn’t see it in you, when he left the Pack he travelled the world he saw rogues and Pack members from all walks of life. He can help you if you let him.”

“It’s your error if you don’t see me as dangerous, do you really think I don’t know true evil?” I don’t know why I’m turning this into a ‘who had it worse’, the truth is either one of our stories sound horrific when spoken aloud.

“I know all about The Shalamayne,” I feel my eyes go wide as I drop back onto the tiny bed. “Cas told me all about how you kidnapped that pup but he also told me that if you had been given the choice you

20.93%

|||

T

14.23

144 Vouchers

wouldn’t have done it and I believe him. I’m sure you’re many things Eva but evil is not one of them.”

“So what, I stay here and let him ‘fix me’? What if there is nothing to fix, what if I’m just broken?” I can feel the tears threatening to fall but I push them back refusing to give the feeling inside me the satisfaction of letting them fall.

“How do you know if you don’t try? At least for a bit? No one’s saying you have to stay here forever” His eyes are pleading with me, he wants me to help his Alpha feel better but how can I do that when I can’t even help myself.

Curling into myself I lay down on the tiny bed, the fact that I can only just about fit onto it makes me realise how tiny Cas must have been.

“I don’t think I’m the person to help him. I’m pretty sure I’m going crazy.” I whisper the words and inwardly cringe as I spill my secrets to Rowan, I half expect him to stop out of the cell and close the door.

“Why do you say that?” He’s looking down at me, his face filled with concern. It wasn’t the reaction I was expecting.

‘Go on, tell the nice warrior.’ I try to push the voice away but it just keeps egging me on to spill my secrets.

"I hear voices, well actually just one." I speak so quietly I'm actually surprised he hears me,

"Like kill all the men with fire, kind of voices?" I can tell he's trying to hold back a laugh as he tries to smooth out his facial features.

"No. More of an inner monologue kind of thing, it's constantly telling me things. What to do or how to do it." I have to admit I sound every bit as crazy as I told him, if I was him I'd be running about now.

45.27%

1423

The Hague Thonga Chapter 20

788 Wow hers

"Really? Sounds interesting, what does the voice say about staying?" I shake my head not wanting to admit that the voice wants me to stay with Cas. "No shame Eva, tell me so I can help." Rowan reminds of James, the Beta I met in Swiftmane and yet another person I harmed.

"It tells me Cas is safe, that I need to stay here because I'm safe with him." Sitting up on the bed I hug my knees, "it's crazy right? Who has a voice telling them what to do, it's like she wants me to do the

complete opposite of what I want." I can hear my voice becoming hysterical so I close my eyes and lean my head back against the wall in a bid to calm myself.

"Well I might be biased but I say listen to the voice, it sounds like it knows what it's doing." He doesn't take me seriously, he can't know what it's like having this feeling worming around inside of you. "When you grow up in a Pack you learn that many things in the world can happen and not all of them are considered normal. Just hang around for a bit, get to know the Pack." Search on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

"And if something goes wrong?" It's a true worry of mine, they think stealing pups is the worst they taught me but they are wrong, I might have been young but I was trained in many different areas.

"Then I'll be there to see it and stop it." Without another word Rowan walks out of the cell and turns to look back at me, "I'll be outside, let me know what you decide."

Left alone I sit up on the tiny bed, staring at the wall, I try to imagine what life in a Pack could look like. Could I actually be a normal member without a wolf, I've never heard of a human living with

shifters.

"Told you to stay in the bedroom." I roll my eyes at the voice and try to block it out, when it keeps repeating I drop my hands to the bed and feel something under the thin mattress. Standing up I pull it off and see

68.81%

|||

O

<

14.231

His Rogue Omega Chapter 25

a thick chain attached to the wall, on the end is a small cuff, big enough for a wrist or maybe the neck of a small boy. Part of me breaks for the small Cas that was in here, no child should have to live through this. I'm surprised he even bothered coming back, dropping the mattress I walk from the cell without a backwards glance. My mind

made up, Cas might not be able to fix me but I can help him.

9435%

|||

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 188

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 21.

☆Cas☆

288 Vouchers

“Then I’ll be there to see it and stop it.” Listening to Rowan promise to stop Eva from doing anything bad has the hairs on the back of my n*eck standing on end. “I’ll be outside, let me know what you decide.” I don’t want her left alone in that tiny cell but I also know Rowan won’t just lock her in, standing outside of the holding building I wait for Rowan to come outside. Waking up covered in sweat and finding Eva gone I was panicked until I remembered Rowan said he had guards on John. I knew she wouldn’t get far, I just didn’t think Rowan himself would be out here.

“Done gossiping?” Rowan looks at me with shock on his face as he stops the main door from fully closing, I smile at him so he knows I’m joking.

“I didn’t tell her much.” He looks behind him as if checking whether Eva is there, “just enough to get her to stay. If she decides to run we will have a hard time bringing her back, she’s a very strong willed female.”

“I know, it makes me wonder how she ended up with the human and why she stayed there for so long.” It bugs me that Eva was ever with that human let alone let him do what he did.

“Guess that’s her story to tell, she’s coming out.” I nod my head as I listen to her tiny feet hitting the concrete floor, she’s walking quite quickly and I’m actually nervous to see if she’s deciding to stay or not. I don’t want to but I’m not above locking her down.

DOON

10 48

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 21.

288 Vouchers

‘She hears a voice, says it’s like an inner monologue.’ My eyes widen as Rowan links to me over our shared Pack connection.

‘Her wolf?’ Rowan just shrugs his shoulders as Eva appears around the door, she looks knackered and like she’s been crying.

“Cas?” I hate that she instantly drops her eyes to the floor, it’s like she just can’t look me in the eye and I wish she would.

“Eva,” I look at Rowan and he just shrugs his shoulders, he doesn’t know where she’s going to go either.

“I’m really tired.” Her voice is low, like she’s not used to voicing out loud what she wants or needs. I reach out my hand intending to touch her arm but she flinches away from me, I make eye contact with Rowan, his raised eyebrow tells me he saw it too.

}

“How about I get you to bed? You can sleep there.” Eva just nods her head keeping her eyes down, I wish she would look at me but something tells me this is a taught move and not one she makes by choice.

‘Find out how she managed to get out here without anyone seeing her.’ Rowan just nods his head once as I spread my arms wide for Eva to walk past us. Following behind Eva we walk in silence back up the porch steps and into the house, thanks to the sun coming up there are now a few females in the kitchen getting ready for the morning rush.

“Oh, Alpha.” Sally comes rushing over to me wiping her hands on her apron, “think you can get one of the lads to do a grocery run? I need a few bits.” Sally is a lovely lady, she’s older than most Alphas would have running the Pack house kitchen but she’s done it for as long as I can remember. Other than her grey hair and wrinkled face she looks just like she did when I was young.

“Just write me a list and I’ll get it sorted.” I nod over at Eva, “I need to

19.87%

1048

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 21.

288 Vouchers

get this one downstairs.”

“Oh, right of course. Does she want some food she’s rather skinny?” That’s Sally all over, she doesn’t question who Eva is, she goes into mother mode instantly. I’m about to answer for her when I realise I should probably let Eva make some decisions for herself, let her grab back some of her independence the human took from her.

“Want some food? Sally can bring it down stairs for you?” Giving her the option of eating away from others might actually get her to eat.

“Please.” Sally nods at her before heading back over to the counter where one of the younger girls is rolling out some pastry for a breakfast pie.

“Any allergies I need to know about?” Eva just shakes her head no, if Sally thinks her behaviour is odd she doesn’t let on. “Alright with blueberries, store bought not fresh from the field thanks to the weather.” Eva’s head shoots up and a smile spreads across her face, it’s the first time I’ve seen her smile, it takes my breath away and I find myself soaking up the look of joy on her face.

“Love them.” Sally smiles back warmly at Eva as she pulls some blueberries towards her.

“Perfect, you go get settled and I’ll be down in a jiffy.” Dismissed I walk a little ahead of Eva, I don’t have to look back to know she’s following me, it’s like I can feel her, it’s like a sixth sense. [SEARCH the FindNOVEL.NET website on GØØGLE to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.](#)

It isn’t long before we are standing in my bedroom, I haven’t spoken since leaving the kitchen. I want Eva to feel comfortable with me and if I do nothing but talk her ear off all the time, I figure if I stay quiet she might start asking for the things she needs. Walking over to the drawers I leave her standing next to the four poster bed, she’s just standing there with her head down and her hair being used as a

44.20%

10:48

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 21.

288 Vouchers

curtain. I love her long black locks but right now I wish she had shorter hair so I can see her face.

“Feel free to shower if you want.” I hold out a grey t-shirt and pair of boxers, it’s the best I can do for now. “I’ll talk to Selena about getting you some more clothes, or maybe we can go by your place and pick up your clothes?”

“No.” She shouts the word so loudly I’m actually shocked that they came from her, between her hair parts a little and I can see the red blush creeping up her face.

“Alright, not your clothes. I’ll talk to Selena while you shower and get some sleep, I’ll be in the office next door if you need me.” I wait for her to take the clothes before I head for the door, just as I’m about to close it behind me she stops me.

“Cas?” Again her voice is so low I barely hear her, I know she can speak loudly and clearly so I don’t know why she’s playing the mouse

now.

“Yeah Angel?” Standing in the doorway I watch as she pulls the clothes close to her chest.

“I’m sorry, I’m just not ready to go back there and I don’t want him to know I’m here.” I think that’s the most she’s said to me since getting here, at least she’s expressing her wants and needs even if it is to keep hiding.

“No problem, shower and sleep.” Closing the door I close my eyes as I realise I’ve just given her a direct order, I’ve tried really hard to not do that but it comes so natural to me that I don’t even realise I’m doing it sometimes.

‘Any news on how she got out?’ I ask Rowan over the Pack link,

68.52%

III

O

<

10:48

His Rogue Omega Chapter 21.

dropping myself into my desk chair, I power up my laptop to see if Alpha Darryl has written back to me.

288 Vouchers

‘Give you two guesses.’ His reply has me sighing and rubbing at my forehead.

‘Was she drinking?’ I don’t know why I bother asking, my mother drinks all the time, I don’t even know who she is sober.

‘I’m having all the alcohol moved from the Pack house unless it’s in your office.’ Yet again Rowan knows what I need before I do, I really do need to find a new Head Warrior so I can give him the bump up in the Pack he deserves.

‘Thanks, when Selena is home can you ask her to sort some clothes for Selena?’ I don’t register his response as I scan the email from Alpha Darryl, ‘and get prepared for a visit, Darryl will be here in two weeks.’

89.55%

Search the **Findnovel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 189

Search The Findnovel.net website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 22.

☆Cas☆

288 Vouchers

You could always shift, let me sleep in wolf and you won't be so stiff.' Honestly it's a thought I'm considering, a week of sleeping in the armchair and my n*eck is so stiff it actually creaks while I roll my head.

'Let's try one of these travel beds before we scare our mate into seeing a massive wolf next to her.' Storm laughs as I scroll through Amazon looking at foldable beds, they all look super uncomfortable but I imagine not as uncomfortable as the armchair.

"Alpha?" My partly open office door is opened fully to reveal Sally holding a tray of what looks like about five different meals. "You s kipped lunch and breakfast," she pops the tray on my desk and my stomach growls loudly as the smells start to hit my nose. "And let's not forget dinner last night. Hiding down here is not doing you any good."

"I'm not hiding, everyone knows exactly where I am." I tell her as I pull the meat pie and potatoes towards me, I can keep the moan from sl*pping from my mouth. "Outdone yourself on this one Sally."

"Well you could have enjoyed it last night if you had come out of hiding, even the little one next door comes out for meals." I roll my eyes, Eva doesn't come out of the room for meals, Sally man handles her out of the room and doesn't give her a chance to say no.

"How is she doing around the Pack?" I've purposefully been avoiding meal times, I want Eva to get to know the Pack without me around to influence her opinions.

0.00%

10:48

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 22.

288 Vouchers

“Well she hasn’t really seen any of them, she will only come up when it’s just me around.” Sally hands me a napkin as some sauce spills down my chin. “I tried taking her up with the Pack there once but the second she heard them talking she bailed back down into your room.”

“Alright, I’ll talk to her.” Sally smiles at me as she heads back out of the office.

“And maybe try to make it for some meals yourself?” I try to answer her but my mouth is full of delicious pie, she just laughs and leaves the office leaving the door open behind her.

I count myself lucky that I manage to finish my pie and eat half of the ham and salad sandwich before I get interrupted. This time it’s a grim faced looking Rowan, I’ve come to learn that Rowan doesn’t overreact to anything. If he looks grim it’s because he has some really bad news for me.

“You need to see this.” He closes the door behind him before handing me a single piece of paper. Putting my sandwich down I take the paper from him, turning it over I see a smiling Eva staring back at me. She looks a little younger but not by much, she’s wearing a white t-shirt that teases the swell of her breasts and her hair is hanging down beyond her shoulders in a black river of silk. She looks so happy and without a care in the world, I’ve never seen Eva like this, even her blue eyes are shining brightly showing that she was probably laughing while this picture was taken. The words at the top of the picture state she’s a missing woman with a health reward of twenty thousand dollars for information on her whereabouts.

“Where did you get this?” I push the plate of food away from me, suddenly my appetite is gone.

“Selena found it on a post outside of the diner, she went to get

breakfast before her shift.” Rowan drops himself into the chair opposite

20.19%

10 48

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 22

288 iVouchers

my desk, “she said they are all over Midsey, apparently Liam put this one up at the request of Jeremy. It’s only going to be a matter of time before he finds out she’s here.”

“Let the abusive piece of s hit come, I’ll show him exactly what I think of him.” I fold the paper so the only part I can see is the smiling Eva, I don’t want to admit that I like the picture because Jeremy probably took it but I think I’ll keep it until I can get one of my own.

“And what? You’re going to beat the cra p out of a human?” Sighing I slide the paper under my laptop, before looking back at Rowan.

“Of course not, I wish I could though.” Rowan looks like he wants to agree with me, don’t get me wrong I’d love to smash Jeremy’s face in but it’s not my place. “We could call the authorities?”

“And have Eva testify in a courtroom? I don’t see that happening, the poor girl barely leaves your room and when she does she’s more interested in her feet.” Rowan’s right, she was shy when I first met her but it’s like Jeremy has brought out this tiny little mouse inside of her, she jumps at the smallest noise and if I move too quickly she almost has a panic attack. “How much did she tell him? Does he know what she is, what we are?”

“No, at least I don’t think so.” It’s something I’ve wondered myself, Eva might not have many aspects of a shifter without her wolf but she has some. She still heals faster than a human, still hears more and sees more than the average human. I find it hard to believe that Jeremy doesn’t know anything about us.

“If he knows about us it will bring the Elders down on Eva, that could mean bad things for her Cas.” He’s not saying anything I don’t know, it would be a death sentence for any other shifter to spill our secret to a human but not Eva.

44 75%

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 22.

1288 (Vouchers

“She might get a slap on the wrist but they won’t kill her. They can’t kill the mate of an Alpha, it’s just not done.” Rowan shakes his head and runs his hands through his dark hair.

"I think you underestimate them, after Elder Thomas and Anna rumour is that they are cracking down. Fraction and Anna disrespected the Elders and that is going to ripple out into the Packs, I don't think she's as safe as you think she is." I don't really know the story of Anna and the Elders but I heard that one of them is her Grandfather which made him pay Swiftmane more attention. From what I understand he

renounced his vows a few months ago and now lives with Fraction and Anna in Momma Beth's old room.

"I'll try and talk to Eva, find out what she did or didn't tell him and try and get grasp on what he knows." Rowan just nods at me before looking at his watch, standing up he hitches his jeans up before turning to the door.

"I need to go and relieve Joe from cell block duty, when are we going to hear from Alpha Darryl on what this drug has done to him? He's just getting worse and Selena is struggling to keep him comfortable." Rowan's not telling me anything I don't know, Alpha Darryl should be here in just over a week but honestly he can't come sooner.

"Soon, he's on route now. He was dealing with something on the Mexican border." Rowan leaves without saying anything else, left alone again. I know I should probably finish my food but cold pie and half a sandwich does not seem appealing.

'You know what you need to do or should I spell it out?' I don't bother answering Storm as I sigh and get up from my desk chair, it's time to talk to Eva about Jeremy, I need to know everything and I have an awful feeling I don't want to know most of it.

68 82%

10.49)

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 22.

288 Vouchers

Locking my office door I take a deep breath as I enter the bedroom, I expect to see Eva on the bed sleeping as she is most of the time. Instead I can't see her anywhere but I can hear the shower running, I think this is the first time she's done something without it being demanded of her. It's a good thing, she's taking care of her needs, even if it is just a shower. It's a small step in the right direction. Sitting in the world's most uncomfortable armchair I wait for her to come out so I can get this conversation on the way.

92.71%

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 190

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 23.

Eva☆

288 Vouchers

In the last week the only place I have found any form of peace is in the shower, each morning Cas tells me to have a shower and I dutifully follow his order. It helps relax all the muscles in my shoulders and back, lately they have been aching more and more and I think it's all the waiting. My b*dy is like a live wire waiting for the next punch, slap or full on beating but it never comes. I told myself I would stay and help Cas because of how he helped me back at Swiftmane but I haven't been able to keep that promise to myself. Actually the only thing I have done is sleep and eat which is weird because before I came here I did little of either of those things.

"Eva?" The knock on the bathroom door has me instantly dropping the towel and folding myself onto the floor, completely n*ked and wet. I sit there and wait for Cas to break down the door to get to me. "When you're done can we have a chat?" I don't answer him as I keep my eyes fixed on the black wooden door, eventually I realise he's not going to come in so I quickly get up and finish drying myself and putting on the sleep shorts and t-shirt Selena gave me.

Opening the bathroom door slowly I peek my head round and see Cas is sitting on the armchair he sleeps on looking at a piece of paper in his hands. Not seeing any danger or sensing any tension I slowly walk into the room, pulling at the t-shirt, I make sure as much of me is covered as possible as I walk over to Cas and stand at the side of his chair. Keeping my eyes on my bare feet I wait to see what he wants me for, I try to think of everything I could have done wrong but nothing comes to mind.

000% search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

|||

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 23.

288 Vouchers

'Stop thinking the worst, he probably wants a chat is all.' I've tried to do what Rowan said and listen to the voice that is plaguing me but sometimes she wants me to do things I just can't.

"I was given this today." Cas holds out the piece of paper, I gasp once I see what's on it, taking it from his hand I walk over to the bed and sit down staring at it.

"This is me, my third date with Jeremy." Noticing the paper is folded, I unfold it to see the word 'missing' and a reward for a stupid amount of money. "He's looking for me." It's not a question because I knew he wouldn't let me go so easily.

"How much does he know Eva?" Using a finger I trace my smile along the photo as I recall the day it was taken, it's actually impressive how quickly my life spiralled even more out of control. "Eva." Cas's tone has my eye shooting to his, I can't remember the last time I looked into Cas's impressive green emeralds but right now I can see the worry in them.

"Know about what?" I ask him as I lower my eyes again, I just don't feel comfortable holding his gaze, I know he sees more than I want him to.

"About you, about us." Sighing I put the picture on the bed and start to pick at my fingers, it's a nervous habit I have that comes out when I don't know how to process things or when I'm really stressed.

"He knows I heal fast but he doesn't know how or why." I never told Jeremy about shifters or anything about this world but that doesn't mean he doesn't know about it from a different source. He wasn't exactly shocked when he saw how quickly I healed when he hit me for the first time.

"How far will he go?" I shake my head so my hair covers my face, armour in place I try and prepare myself to tell Cas about Jeremy.

19.88%

|||

10.49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 23.

288 Vouchers

"When I first met Jeremy I was a girl living on the street and he was a three piece suit wearing gentleman. He was everything I wasn't and nothing I've ever known, he had

this smile that just made you smile back.” I can’t look at Cas as I start talking about Jeremy, to his credit he just sits in the armchair listening. “It started innocently enough, he bought me a hot chocolate and we talked for hours and hours. Before I knew it this man became my whole world, he’d gotten me off the streets and into his spare bedroom, he gave me a job at his bar cleaning tables.” Cas growls, I know he knows the kind of bars Jeremy owns,

we were friends and roommates for a few months before he asked me out on our first date. I remember I was so excited, he was so much older than me and he wanted me, no one has ever wanted me like that.”

5

“And let me guess, he took full advantage of the young girl swooning all over him?” Cas sounds bitter as hell and I can’t stop the laugh that barks out.

“You couldn’t be more wrong,” I actually feel a smile trying to form on my face. “The early months with Jeremy were wonderful, we didn’t even sleep together until I was eighteen. He refused and honestly it just made me think even higher of him.”

“But it didn’t last?” I shake my head as my hands start to shake, I trap them under my crossed legs to stop myself from fiddling with them.

“It all changed that next morning, I woke up all happy and this glowy feeling. I had no idea how bad things were about to go.” I feel a tear roll down the side of my face as I remember that first night, “it was my first time, I hadn’t told Jeremy so when I got up that morning there was blood on the white sheet. It wasn’t a lot, it was only a patch about the size of a dime but Jeremy started screaming and raging. I was so scared that I just stayed sitting on the bed, completely n*ked while he yelled.” I don’t know when Cas moved but I suddenly feel his hand sliding up and down my back, he’s not touching me anywhere else and honestly

40.46%

T

10:49

His Rogue Omega Chapter 23.

1288 Vouchers

the movement is kind of soothing.

“He hit you?” I just nod my head as I brush at my face to try and stop the rush of tears now freely flowing.

“He beat me so badly that when it was over I could barely get off the floor, when I did finally get up I realised I was alone in an empty apartment. I did the only thing I could think of, I got dressed and I ran.” I don’t know why I’m still talking and why I’m spilling everything to Cas but now that I’ve started I can’t seem to stop.

“Smart girl but I’m guessing he found you?” I flinch a little as Cas moves a hand up to my face and pulls my hair behind my ear, once I can see his face I see nothing but compassion, there is no judgement or anger there.

“It wasn’t even a full day before he tracked me down to the train

station, I had a little money and I thought maybe if I got out of Seattle I’d be safer. Instead he dragged me back to his apartment and chained me to the wall of the spare bedroom. He left me there for a whole week with barely any food or water,” I shiver as I recall being in that room. “It was the isolation that did me in I think, I’ve been in some bad situations but I’ve never been alone. Not truly alone like that, so when he came back and laid out the rules I realised why I was there, why this man had come into my life.”

“Tell me, make me understand how someone as brave and smart as you justifies staying with someone like that.” I know he’s not saying it to be callous, Cas just wants to actually understand my decision.

“He told me,” taking a deep breath I recall the words Jeremy told me that day, the words that have run through my mind everyday since. “He told me that I was lucky that God had chosen him to teach me the error of my way. That he saw the evil within me and the evil I will do to the world, that it was his job to make sure the world didn’t suffer for my

64.39%

10.49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 23.

mistakes.”

288 Vouchers

Cas moves from the bed slowly before walking over to the door, at first I think he is going to leave but instead he just stands there facing the wall with his fists clenched. I can see the tension rolling through his b*dy as his shoulders shake, it takes him a solid five minutes to get himself in check and turn around to face me.

“Look at me Angel,” I’m scared of what I’ll see but I raise my eyes to him, instead of anger I see sadness and a wetness that tells me he was crying right alongside of me. “I need you to hear this Eva, not just listen, actually hear it.” I nod my head at him as he

walks over to me and kneels beside the bed and carefully takes my hand from under my leg. "Jeremy will never get you again, you will never ever have to go back to him. And I can guarantee that man was not put into your life to punish you, you are not evil, you were used and tricked. You were manipulated into doing things you didn't want to do, that makes the people who f ucked with you evil. Not you." Closing my eyes I soak up what he tells me, I don't know why but I can almost feel his words soaking into my very bones.

86.47%

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 191

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 24.

☆Cas☆ SEAR*ch the FindNOvel.net website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

288 Vouchers

"Da mn springs," I groan as I try to lift myself out of the armchair, it's been yet another night of barely any sleep and not just because of the chair. I don't know if it was talking about Jeremy or thinking of the past but Eva was having nightmare after nightmare last night, I had to will myself not to go to her as she cried out in pain. Looking over at my bed I see Eva with the comforter up to her chin and her l*ps pressed in a thin line, her face is bright red from trying to stop the laughter escaping. "Oh, you think this is funny Angel? I hope you're comfy in that California king because I'm going to have major back issues later in life now." That does Eva in and the most beautiful sound I have ever heard echoes around the room, at least until she can't catch her breath and she snorts.

"Oh!" She covers her face with her hands as I roar with laughter on my way to the bedroom, I like that telling me about Jeremy seems to have put a kink in her armour.

"Don't worry Angel, I won't tell anyone you're a little piggy." I wiggle my eyebrows at her and she just blushes redder than a raspberry. "On the sofa there are some clothes Selena left you. Get dressed while I shower, we're going out today." I don't wait to see

her reaction to leaving the bedroom, instead I dash into the bathroom for a quick shower.

It isn't until I am running the soap over my chest and ignoring my rock hard cock that I realise I didn't pick up any clothes. I can only hope Eva does not panic when I step out in nothing but a towel.

0.00%

||

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 24

288 Vouchers

'You don't have to get n*ked in front of her.' Storm growls at the idea of me scaring our mate.

'I'm not going to get n*ked, I'm just going to grab my clothes and come back to the bathroom.' I roll my eyes as I rinse the soap from my b*dy and turn the shower nozzles to stop the water.

"This trip is pushing her too fast, she needs protection.' I listen to Storm as I step from the shower and grab the towel from the back of the door. I knew Storm was protective of Eva but I didn't think he felt he had to protect her from me.

'What she needs are her own clothes, stuff of her own, females need that kind of stuff. How can I expect her to feel comfortable here when she has no stuff of her own?' I finish drying myself off and wrap the towel around my waist, making sure it's secure, I open the door to see the bedroom is empty.

"Eva?" The woman has barely left the room in over a week but now she's just gone.

"She's out here with me, Alpha." I hear Selena shout from the little makeshift lounge I have down here.

'She doesn't need stuff, we need to take her and run. Protection is the only thing she needs, you need to go old school on this.' I slam Storm down so quickly he starts to growl at me, I can't say I know what to do about everything but I do know that throwing Eva over my shoulder and running off into the wild is not what needs to happen.

"I'll be there in just a minute and then we can get going." I shout as I head over to my drawers and quickly pull out some Levi's and a plain black t-shirt. Once I'm all dried and

dressed I step out of the bedroom to see Selena standing at the little mirror and Eva sitting on the sofa looking totally uncomfortable.

21.42%

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 24.

288 Vouchers

“Ready?” Selena asks as she looks at me through the mirror, her voice is a little too chipper and I can see the worry around her eyes.

“Everything alright ladies?” Both of them just nod at me in a way that tells me everything is anything but alright, “well let’s get going then.” I clap my hands together and start for the stairs, Selena beats me to them and starts on up as Eva stops me.

“Cas?” Her voice is so low that I almost don’t hear her over the clicking of Selena’s heeled black boots on the wooden stairs.

“What is it, Angel?” I turn back to her with a hand on the bannister, she hasn’t moved from the sofa and looks really worried. She’s picking at the nails on her hand which I’ve come to notice as a nervous gesture she has.

“Where are we going?” Closing my eyes I realise how stupid I’ve been, I’ve treated her like any other female who would love a surprise but Eva isn’t just any other female. Stepping off the stairs I look up to ensure Selena isn’t listening, once I’m sure we are alone I walk over to the sofa and sit down. Eva shuffles over a little so our legs stop touching but otherwise stays on the sofa.

“Well I figured you would be more comfortable with some of your own stuff around you.” Eva sits up straighter and I can tell she’s instantly on high alert, “don’t worry. I heard you last night, we aren’t going to Jeremy’s, we are going a couple towns over to the big mall.”

“I don’t have any money, he took everything. Even the tips I tried to save,” she practically deflates when she realises I’m not taking her to Jeremy. “I can afford anything, I highly doubt I have a job anymore.”

“I’ll worry about the money, let’s just go and get you all you need.” Thinking we are done I stand up from the sofa and turn back to Eva holding out my hand to her, she just looks at me shaking her head

44 46%

10:49

His Rogue Omega Chapter 24.

288 Vouchers

though.

“I can’t take your money.” I sigh as I see the stubborn look in her face.

“How about, I lend you it? I’ll get you what you need and when you get back on your feet you can pay me back?” I have no intention of taking her money but I really want her off this sofa and out into the world, she needs some fresh air and some interactions with people who aren’t me.

“Alright,” Eva smiles up at me just before she stands and runs her hands down the form fitting dark grey leggings she’s wearing. “It will be nice to have some clothes I don’t have to fold over to fit me. I don’t know if you’ve noticed but Selena is a giant compared to me.” I hold back a laugh as she starts to walk up the stairs ahead of me, I told Rowan last night to make sure the Pack house was empty this morning. At least until we leave, I’m not going to push the Pack in Eva’s face in one go. I’ll introduce them to her slowly and over time.

She waits at the top of the stairs for me, not knowing where to go. I figure she’s just waiting for me to tell her, once I come through the door I realise that’s not what made her stop.

“Sookie? What are you doing here?” I can’t keep the venom from my voice, I’ve been avoiding her since that day in the diner.

“Apparently she heard we are going to the mall and wants to tag along.” Selena rolls her eyes as she grabs Eva’s hand and pulls her in the direction of the front door and my car.

“You aren’t coming, Sookie.” The idea behind this trip is to kit Eva out and maybe help fix the friendship between her and Selena, at no point did I want to introduce her to Sookie.

“But baby,” Sookie’s whiney voice has me scrunching my nose. “I need some girl stuff and I haven’t seen you in ages.” She twirls her platinum

6941%

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 24.

288 Vouchers

blonde hair around her finger and bites her bottom lip in what I'm sure is meant to be seductive.

"You can come and get your shopping but you don't bother Eva or Selena and you absolutely cute out this baby crap." I put on my hardest Alpha voice to make my point to her, "I'm not now nor will I ever be your 'baby', it's Alpha or Cas when around the humans." Sookie's eyes go wide for a second before she nods her head, knowing I'm going to regret this I head for the door listening to her follow me.

93.14%

Search on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 192

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 25.

☆ Eva☆

288 iVouchers

"I didn't realise how cold it had gotten." I've only been at the Packhouse for a little under two weeks and there is already snow on the ground.

"It tends to do that in the winter." I look down at my hands in shame as Cas looks in his rearview mirror, I don't know how I ended up in the front seat but Cas keeps looking in his mirror like he wishes Sookie was up front instead. Search on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

"Alright ladies," Cas turns the car off as we finally park up in an ice covered car park in front of a mall called 'Winterfall Shops'. "Where to first?" I wait for one of the two women in the back to answer but after a couple of minutes no one speaks, looking up from my hands I see Cas is looking at me. "Where to first Angel?"

"I don't know." I say quietly, a giggle from the backseat tells me Sookie finds my answer rather amusing.

“How about toiletries? Get the boring stuff out of the way?” I nod my head at Selena’s suggestion, it will be nice to have some stuff to wash my hair in. Cas’s shampoos and soaps are nice a minty smelling but they don’t do much for my long locks.

Walking into the shopping centre is an interesting experience, I’ve never seen so many happy people in one place. Teenagers are laughing and chatting, women are going from shop to shop and men are standing around waiting for their women to be done. It’s all so normal

0.00%

|||

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 25.

288 | Vouchers

reads the back of the package.

“Selena go find me some male scent ones, I don’t feel like an Argan and Camellia Oil kind of guy.” Selena just beams at us as she bounces off looking for more shampoo bars.

“Personally I don’t see the point, all goes down the drain after the shower.” I almost forgot Sookie was with us as she drops hairspray, fake nails and three packets of mascara into the basket. Given the glowing tan to her skin, of which most can be seen in her tiny crop top and denim short shorts, I’m surprised a couple tins of fake tan aren’t being thrown in too. “I like the one you use now.” Sookie runs her finger down Cas’s arm while looking up at him with seductive eyes, I have to look away as a pain starts right in the centre of my chest.

My feet hurt by the time we leave the fourth store, I’ve lost count of how much I’ve spent but the receipt for each purchase has been put into the bags, I’ll just add it up later. Cas refuses to let me carry any of the bags and is currently looking very much like a pack horse with all the bags of clothes, shoes and toiletries.

“Are you sure you don’t want me to carry one?” I ask for maybe the third time, he just shakes his head at me as Selena grabs my arm and pulls me towards Victoria Secret. “Oh, I don’t need anything from there.”

“Don’t you wear panties?” Cas just laughs as he parks himself on a bench just outside of the store.

“I’ll wait here ladies.” I don’t get a chance to answer as Selena pulls me into what looks like a man’s wet dream, honestly they didn’t even have this much lace backstage at the Dragon’s Flame. I follow Selena over to the more subdued looking panties and start to look for my size, I’ve always been a fan of the peekaboo style panties, g-strings and thongs

38.70%

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 25.

1288 Vouchers

don’t really do anything for me.

“You want something like these.” Sookie holds up some panties that look more like pieces of string than actual panties.

“Not really my thing.” I can feel the blush creeping up my face as I imagine wearing something that uncomfortable.

“I prefer the booty short types.” Selena holds up some blue lace booty shorts, they are S*x y while still totally practical.

“I don’t need sexy, just some plain panties will be just fine.” I start looking around me for some simple multi packs but this whole shop seems to be lace on lace, I don’t see anything for the normal woman.

“It’s about feeling good for you and you never know, maybe in the future you might want some sexy ones.” I ignore Selena as I notice some girls from the strip club, they are over by the corsets and seem to be on a shopping trip. I quickly spin around and leave the store, I hear Selena behind me as I run over to Cas.

“What happened?” Cas sounds angry as he leaves the bags by the bench and puts his hands on my upper arms. “Eva, look at me.” All I can seem to hear is the blood rushing into my head as I wonder if the girls saw me, if they did they will tell Jeremy. “Selena what the hell happened? She’s shaking.”

“I don’t know, we were chatting and then she just bolted like she had seen a ghost.” I feel Selena touch my back and I jump about a mile in the air.

“Go back to the shop and get what she needs, we’ll meet you and Sookie in the car. Give me at least twenty minutes.” I don’t hear Selena’s response as Cas pulls me a little and I start walking alongside him, I can’t see anything around me, everything feels like it’s crushing down

60.35%

||

O

10:49

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 25.

288 Vouchers

on top of me and I can't seem to catch my breath. My palms are sweating and I can feel my heart beating out of my chest, all I can think is that my time is up and Jeremy will know where I am now.

"Angel, look at me." Cas's hands are back on the tops of my arms but I can't seem to raise my head, I can feel my breath seesawing in and out of me and my chest is starting to hurt. "Eva!" My head snaps up as he shouts at me, his green eyes hold me captive, "good, now I want you to breathe with me, in and out." It takes a while but I keep following his breathing until I feel my heart rate come down and blood stops rushing around my head. I can now feel the cold of the air around me, except for the place Cas's hands are holding me. He's only touching the tops of my arms but it feels like I can feel him all over my b*dy. "That's it, good girl. Now when you feel ready, can you tell me what happened?" I nod my head at him as I continue to copy his breathing, I don't know why but when Cas praises me it's like a warmth that fills me up from the inside.

"I saw some girls from the club, in the store." My voice is shaky but I'm kind of proud I can even make words right now.

"So you panicked that they would recognise you?" I nod my head at Cas, he looks over my head and smiles down at me. "Well I don't think they did or they would have followed you, Selena and Sookie are coming now. Let's get you home, I'm proud of you for calming down." My heart rate skyrockets for a different reason as he leans in and places a quick and simple k*ss on my forehead.

80.74%

10:49

||

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 193

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 26.

☆ Eva☆

288 (Vouchers

“Relax Angel, no one is coming.” Cas buckles me into the car and closes the door just as Selena and Sookie reach the car. Selena slides into the back seat while Cas and Sookie put the bags in the trunk.

“You alright?” I just nod my head at her as I close my eyes and try to relax myself just like Cas said. “I got you some basic boots cuts and some with lace on, nothing too sexy. And some bralettes, if they don’t fit I’ll get Cas to bring you back some other time.”

“I still needed to go to the sensual oil place.” Sookie complains loudly as she climbs into the back of the car, I roll my eyes at Selena who covers her mouth to hide her laugh.

“Tough, I need to get back to the Pack. I just have one stop to make before we do.” Cas starts the car just as he reaches over and squeezes my hand, “be home soon. Try and have a nap.” A nap actually sounds ideal. My whole b*dy feels like a live wire, rubbing my hands up my arms, I close my eyes and try to zone out Sookie complaining loudly about missing out on her shopping trip.

It’s not long before the car is stopping outside of a large yellow building. I expect Cas to get out of the car but instead he winds down his window while pressing a button that pops the trunk.

.

“Castiel Freelin?” A young kid in a bright yellow jacket and a hard hat one asks, Cas just nods his head and signs the clipboard pushed through the open window, “We’ll pop it in the trunk for you and you’re good to go, any issues just contact the seller.”

G00%

III

O

17.00 M)

r

His Rogue Omega Chapter 26.

288 Vouchers

“What’s that?” Sookie asks from behind us, I don’t bother to look but I feel the car jolt as something heavy is put in the trunk.

“Something for me, now let’s get you home ladies.” Cas starts the car again and after a while the motion of driving down the freeway has me nodding off into a much needed nap. Cas’s hand stays in mine, he doesn’t seem to mind driving one handed and I actually like the feel of his hand in mine, it’s helping to ground me to the current moment and not think of the past.

For the first time in a while I wake up feeling quite refreshed. I couldn’t have slept for long because the mall wasn’t too far from the Pack house. I don’t think I had a bad dream either which is rare for me, my dreams are normally an instant replay of one beating or another. A sharp poke in my shoulder has me jerking around, the first thing I realise is that the car is empty except for Sookie.

“Where did everyone go?” Sookie just fl*ps her hair over her shoulder as I look outside of the car for a sign of Cas or Selena.

“They went inside, there is an Alpha visiting from another Pack. I don’t know, apparently it’s some big to do, from the way they both rushed in there.” She nods over at a black Impala, I only recognise the car because of the comics some of the kids used to read at The

Shalamayne.

“Which Alpha?” I don’t think it’s Alpha Fraction as I think he used an SUV but I could be wrong, it’s not like cars are the first thing I notice.

“How should I know, I was just to stay here until you woke up but honestly it’s boring as hell. Think we can get your pampered ass inside now?” I roll my eyes at Sookie as I go to step out of the car, “finally. Damn pampered princess.” I don’t know why Sookie hates me so much but her snarky comments all day have left me feeling like she wants to say something but she’s holding herself back.

17 68%

O

17:05

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 26.

288 iVouchers

“Have I upset you?” I ask her, it takes everything in me not to look at the floor but I know if I do this woman will just walk all over me. She just gets out of the car slamming the door behind her so I quickly follow her so we are standing beside the car, “Sookie?”

“What do you want from me?” My eyes widen as I take a step back from the blonde banshee now standing in front of me, looking around I try to find someone to save me from the angry shifter but no one is here. “Isn’t it enough that you come and sleep in my future mate’s bed? That he fawns all over you and stays by your side? Honestly you must have a golden pussy because I’ve never seen a man fall so hard for a woman in my life.” She points her finger at me, clearly not done with her rant now she has the freedom to get it all out. “And now to top it all off I have to play babysitter, just do us all a favour and run off like the scared little rogue you are. If you can even call yourself that!”

“I didn’t ask to be here.” I say quickly but this seems to just anger her more as her red lips puff out and her shoulders become stiff.

“Oh no, poor little Eva doesn’t have to ask for anything. You have Sally waiting on you hand and foot, the Head Warriors mate is basically nestled in your ass, she wants to be your friend so much. I’m pretty sure if you actually ventured out of my mates You would have this Pack wrapped around your little finger.” I’m actually shocked at the words coming from Sookie, other than the diner I’ve had very little to do with her. For her to judge me like this and not actually know me it’s making me angry and I’m not someone who gets angry often.

‘Oh this bitch needs to be taught what is what!’ For once me and my inner crazy are in sync

“You don’t know me, you have no idea who I am!” I’m actually shouting, I can’t remember the last time my voice was more than a whisper. “I didn’t ask for any of this, your Head Warrior asked me to

39 17%

1705

O

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 26.

288 Vouchers

stay when I wanted to leave so if you have a problem with me being here you need to take it up with him and your Alpha.” Sookie just stands there and confident I have said my peace I turn and walk away.

“You need to learn your place.” Those six words have me stopping cold, ‘learn your place’ that’s what Jeremy used to say as he laid into me, it’s also what the various members of The Shalamayne used to say as they whipped me. ‘Learn your place’, I’m so sick of people telling me to learn my place. Without even thinking about what I’m doing I turn around and throw my fist into Sookie’s face, thanks to my time with The Shalamayne I know how to defend myself and throw a decent punch if I need to.

“Like I said, don’t pretend to know who I am.” Apparently I vastly underestimated a female shifter because when she looks back at me her once blue eyes are now yellow. My survival instinct kicks in and I take a step back as she starts to growl, her arms seem to shake as she falls. forward onto her hands and knees.

“When this is over you’re buying me a new set of nails.” I try to move but something is stopping me, I can feel the fear shaking through me as I watch the woman in front of me slowly turn into a dark grey wolf.

‘I’ll take it from here.’ I don’t really know what happens but one second I am there watching this dark grey wolf growl and lower itself to the ground and the next I am pulled backwards as an equally loud growl sounds. I try to look around me but it’s like I’m stuck looking at the situation folding out in front of me, Sookie’s wolf steps back like she’s shocked just a second before I hear a scream.

“Sookie stand down.” The dark grey wolf instantly sits back on her hind legs and looks down at the floor, she looks like a scolded pup.

“I thought you said she didn’t have a wolf? Now you have a dangerous rogue on your land.” I don’t recognise the voice shouting but as I

61.69%

111

O

1705

His Rogue Omega Chapter 26.

process the words I wonder which rogue she's talking about. A loud growl sounds which makes me think there is a wolf behind me so I stand perfectly still.

"Just stay where you are, Darryl, a little help." I see Cas step into my view with his hands out in front of him like he's showing me he's not a threat. "Hey beautiful, you picked some cracking timing to shift for the first time."

'I shifted?' I try to say but all that comes out is a low whine. Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

'Duh, what? Did you think I was the da mn tooth fairy or something?' The voice that speaks in my head somehow sounds louder, 'bi tch was going to cut you down. I needed to take matters into my own hands.'

"As beautiful as you are, we have guests right now. Think you can let Eva come back out?" I feel myself move as my wolf steps closer to Cas, he stands perfectly still as she sniffs along his arm and then winds her b*dy along his legs, swishing her tail as she goes. "If you let Eva back out I promise you and Storm can go for a run later."

'Oh da mn right I'm running with that sinful wolf.' My wolf says excitedly just as I feel myself pulled forward, one second I'm someplace far away and the next I'm on the ground listening to Cas shout at people to turn away from me. Gasping for breath I feel breath, I feel Ca s 's arms come around me and pick me up from the cold floor, the second I am in his arms I wrap my hands around his n*eck and s b.

83.75%

Search the **Find_** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 194

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 27.

☆Cas☆

“Darryl, I didn’t think you were coming until Friday?” I pulled up seeing Darryl’s Impala in the driveway, I didn’t like the idea that he had arrived while I was out so I ordered Sookie and Selena to wait with Eva and dashed into the house.

“Elder Iris here wanted to come sooner.” It’s only then that I notice the elderly woman wearing a red robe and tiny half moon glasses.

“Elder,” I bow my head a little at her as I shake Darryl’s hand.

“I won’t sugar coat it Alpha Castiel, I’ve been sent here about the rogue you have here.” My eyes widen and I look over at Darryl who just shrugs his shoulders, he looks tired with bags around his hazel eyes and grey flecks are starting to show in his hair.

“If you’re talking about Eva, she’s hardly a rogue, she doesn’t even have a wolf.” I’ll be the first to admit that I’m a little defensive when it comes to Eva, “how far you come into my Pack land and demand to know anything about my guests.”

“Calm down Cas.” Darryl’s hand on my shoulder has me looking round and I can see Rowan standing in the doorway with a worried Selena, “where is she?”

“I left Sookie with her.” I growl as I storm past Selena, she’s lucky she moves out of the way quickly because I’m pretty sure I would have flattened her.

0.00%

III

17:06

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 27.

288 Vouchers

Walking out of the front door I quickly start sprinting over to the car, Sookie’s wolf is facing down against a massive white wolf. Much bigger than any female we have in our Pack, sniffing I’m shocked to find it Eva.

“Sookie stand down.” I command as I pulse out my Alpha aura, I hear a whimper behind me but I keep my eyes on Eva’s wolf, she’s beautiful and clearly deadly from the way she’s snarling at Sookie.

“I thought you said she didn’t have a wolf? Now you have a dangerous’ rogue on your land.” Eva must not like what Elder Iris shouts out because she snarls again while snapping her jaw.

“Just stay where you are, Darryl, a little help.” I hear Darryl quietly shuffle Elder Iris back into the house. “Hey beautiful, you picked some cracking timing to shift for the first time.” Standing in front of Eva I hold out my hands showing her I don’t mean her any harm. “As beautiful as you are, we have guests right now. Think you can let Eva come back out?” It takes a moment but her wolf comes forward and starts sniffing at my hand. She must like what she smells because she starts rubbing herself against my legs. I don’t think she realises it but she’s treating me like a mate. It’s extremely intimate how she’s rubbing her whole b*dy against me, letting me feel her every curve and muscle. “If you let Eva back out I promise you and Storm can go for a run later.” Her wolf must like that idea because she suddenly starts to vibrate and with the ease of an Alpha she snaps back into herself, n*ked and gasping for breath she stays on all fours on the concrete driveway.

With Eva in my arms I get a good smell of her for the first time, she smells like her normal wet grass on a hot day but there is something else. Something I’ve only ever smelt a handful of times and it has me walking through the house quickly.

17.35%

|||

O

1706

r

His Rogue Omega Chapter 27.

200 Vouchers

“Cas?” I ignore Darryl as I open the basement door one handed and practically fly down the stairs with my n*ked mate in my arms. I don’t let her go until we are back in my bedroom and that only so I can place her in the bed and climb in next to her, she’s still crying. I don’t know if it’s the shock of shifting or if it hurt her so badly that she’s crying through the pain.

“You’re safe now Angel,” I stroke her sweaty black hair as she curls herself into my side. I can feel her taking lungfuls of my scent, she probably doesn’t know what my scent means to her and right now is not the time to educate her. “What happened?” I don’t understand why she and Sookie were in a confrontation, I know Sookie can be annoying but apparently I’ve been blind to something.

“She told me,” Eva gasps for breath as she tries to speak. “She told me to ‘learn my place’, and something just snapped. So many people have told me that and with her, I don’t know Cas something just snapped inside of me.” I hum low in my chest, letting it

rumble out in a soothing way, it seems to relax her as she settles her head over my heart.

“Everyone has a breaking point Angel, I guess Sookie just found yours.” A knock sounds on the door but I ignore it, an Elder might be here but right now my mate needs me. I keep stroking Eva’s hair until her breathing evens out and tells me she’s fallen asleep, if she’s like anyone else after their first shift, she will sleep for a good while. Carefully I extract myself from her and slime from the bed, I’d love to just lay here and hum for her but I do need to deal with the Elder. I have no idea her real reason for being here but Elders don’t just turn up

for no reason.

Opening the bedroom door I see Darryl and Rowan sitting on the small sofa, both of them stand as soon as I step out.

41.81%

III

17:06 M)

His Rogue Omega Chapter 7

“Sorry.” I say quickly as I fish out my office keys from my jeans.

#zea (Vouchers

“Don’t be sorry, your mate just shifted for the first time. No way to plan ahead for that.” Rowan grunts in agreement with Darryl as they both follow me into the office. I sit down and watch Darryl look around at the new Alpha office, if he finds it odd that I’m down here he doesn’t say it.

“Why is the Elder here?” I ask him once they are both sitting in front of me.

“The human that Eva was seeing, he knows she’s a wolf. Elder Iris is here to see if Eva is the one who told him.” I look at Rowan and can

tell from one look at his face he had no idea this was coming.

“It’s not as cut and dry as you think,” I don’t really want to tell Darryl – all about Eva but I will if I’m pushed. I’m not sure it’s my story to tell.

“Rowan already told me,” I try to keep my feelings to myself but they must show on my face because Rowan drops his head in shame. “Don’t blame him, I might have forced it out of him while we waited. It’s one hell of a story, I knew about The Shalamayne but that human is a piece of work.” Sighing I just nod my head at Darryl, chances are that after a few glasses of whiskey he would have had the story out of me too. “You know your mate is an Omega right?”

“I had no idea until about fifteen minutes ago, that was the first time she shifted.” Rowan sits up in his chair as if he’s suddenly paying very close attention to our conversation.

“I’ve already told the warriors to tighten up patrols, we haven’t had an Omega before so I need to train the guys on how to protect one.” I just blink my eyes at Rowan, how this man takes it all in stride is beyond me. “Actually I’m going to get a new schedule written up now, the ‘ Elder is on the first floor. She’s gone for a nap so you have some time.”

66.10%

<

17.06 m)

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 27.

288 Vouchers

With that he stands and leaves the office, with it just being me and Darryl I open my draw and pull out two clean glasses and a fresh bottle of Jameson.

“Are

you still drinking that cr ap?” I chuckle as I pour using both a three finger amount, using one finger I slide his glass across the desk. “You know you need a new Head Warrior right? That lad has Beta written all over him.” SEARCH THE (website on GØØGLE to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

“Yeah I know, when I find the time I’ll get right on it.” Holding up my glass Darryl clinks his against mine.

“To your Omega and all the drama that comes to be fated to one.” I don’t say anything as I open my mouth and slam the whole of my drink back in one go, I might have thought I have a lot going on before but I know it’s about to get a lot worse.

90.08%

Search the **Findnovel.net** website on GØØGLE to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 195

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 28.

☆Cas☆ SEARCH THE website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

288 Vouchers

he'

“So the Elders think Eva spilled the big secret and now they want what?” Darryl rolls his head on his shoulders, I hadn't noticed how much he's aged over the last few years. It's even more apparent now s sitting in front of me, fantasy lore would have you think shifters live forever but actually we age much like everyone else. We are just fitter and our wolves keep us living longer, it's not unusual for a shifter to hit triple digits before passing. Darryl is nowhere near that age though, I know he's pushing forty-five though, his look of age comes from him not mating, Alpha's need their mate.

“Honestly, I have no idea, with her being your mate I can't imagine,” a seriously loud bang and the sound of glass smashing above us has us both looking towards the ceiling. “What the hell?” Darryl's words are muttered as he launches from his chair at the same time as me, together we race through the office door and up the stairs. I'm only a step or so ahead of Darryl so I see the carnage before he does, I actually stop at the door and just stare for a second.

The entire lounge has been ripped apart like someone has gone on a rampage, the cream sofa has been fl*pped, the glass coffee table is across the room and in shards, no doubt the sound we earned.

“What the da mn hell?”/I demand of my mother as I step into the room, she's just standing there looking at her handy work while sipping on a glass of gin.

“Martha what the hell did you do?” Darryl is looking around the room

0.00%

|||

O

17:06)

r

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 28.

288 iVouchers

in shock, he's seen my mother drunk, he's seen her oblivious but he's never seen her this mad before.

"He never wanted you to stand here," I quickly glance to the lounge door and see Rowan swooping Sally and Selena away. "He never wanted you back at this Pack, taking over like you have. And look at you now."

"Your drunk Martha, go to bed. Get some rest." I'm just standing here feeling much like the small child she once said the same words to, the night I left she told me my father didn't want me here. It was the last push I needed before running for the door and never looking back.

"Don't tell me what to do in my Pack," she points at her chest with a long red nail, it digs into the top of her breast leaving a white crescent mark. "I built this Pack, I made this Pack what it was. No Alpha is anything without the woman behind them, I was that woman. Me!" She's screaming by the time she's reaches the end of her rant, she is looking directly at Darryl so she doesn't see me move when I swipe her hand and snatch the drink from her.

"The great Luna of Everfur, forever drunk and drowning in gin." I can't keep the bitterness from my voice as I walk over to one of the bookcases and put the half full glass down. I have her drink so my mother's eyes trail me as I walk across the room, "care to tell me what the hell brought this on while I have an Elder in the house?" I'm trying to keep myself from shouting and creating more of a scene. Darryl is standing by the basement door but he keeps looking behind him like he's checking Eva hasn't come out.

"That's exactly it, forty years me and your father ran this Pack and never once did an Elder ever step foot in here. Less than six months and you have one sleeping on the first floor, they bring nothing but problems." I shake my head at her, I don't understand how she can be so clueless.

1981%

|||

17:06

His Rogue Omega Chapter 28.

288 Vouchers

“The Elders never came here because father cut the Pack off from

everyone, he refused outsiders. The Elder is here because of an ongoing issue, it’s got nothing to do with the Pack.” I see Darryl about to say something but I shake my head, the last thing I need is for him to set fire to this gin soaked mess.

“Oh and I guess it’s got nothing to do with the rogue Omega who attacked your intended mate?” I roll my eyes, Sookie is not my mate and Eva did not attack her but naturally my mother only heard what she wanted to hear from the story and I’m sure Sookie was only too happy to spill the beans.

“Sookie is not my intended mate.” I say each word clearly so there can be no mistaking my words.

“She’s the strongest female in the Pack.” I smile as Storm whispers in my ear, he’s been soothing Eva’s wolf and trying to get to know her.

“She was, there is a new female in the Pack now.” Darryl chuckles as my mother’s eyes go comically wide.

“So what? Is she your intended now? You can’t mate a rogue.” She actually stamps her high heeled foot like a small child.

“No.” My mother smiles a little like she’s just won a battle, “she’s not my intended. She’s my fated mate.” My mother’s eyes shoot from me and then to Darryl like she’s trying to get one of us to deny what I just said. Her face starts to go red when she realises no one is going to say what she wants to hear. “You can leave now, this is your last warning. Stop drinking or you will be removed from this Pack.”

“You ruined him, you know.” She spits at Darryl’s booted feet as she stumbles from the lounge, I shake my head as she clutches the wall for stability before disappearing from view. I hear Rowan murmuring to her so I know he’s making sure she gets to her room and not to

43.82%

1706)

His Rogue Omega Chapter 28.

288 Vouchers

somewhere she can cause more problems.

“How long has she been like this?” Darryl walks over to the shattered coffee table and rights the frame so the legs aren’t sticking out.

“Like this? She hasn’t done anything like this, I don’t know from one day to the next if I’m going to get a drunk raving lunatic or my silent mother who watches everything.” I run my hands through my hair as I look around and catalogue the damage, it’s not about the money it will cost to replace things, it’s the lack of disrespect. She trashed this room because it’s directly above my office so she knew this would get my attention, it was calculated and planned.

“This can’t just be over Eva or Elder Iris.” Darryl is shaking his head as he starts to brush the glass into a pile with his booted foot.

“I

agree, there has to be something more going on but right now I have too much going on to deal with her.” Darryl nods his head but remains silent, he has this pensive look on his face which I know means he’s already thinking twenty steps ahead of me. “What’s that look for?”

“I don’t know,” Darryl shakes his head like he’s trying to clear his thoughts. “How about you show me John while the Elder is down?”

“Sure he’s out in the cells.” Darryl’s eyes go wide for a second before he nods and walks over the glass head towards the kitchen and the back door, “we didn’t know where else to put him. I needed him somewhere so he couldn’t get more drugs while he calmed down.”

“Well that didn’t work did it? Someone is still getting the drugs to him, there is no way the drug can still be in his system.” We enter the kitchen and I notice Sally and the girls are missing which means Rowan cleared the house when my mother started kicking off.

“You don’t think it could still be in his system?” I have to admit I don’t

6647%

||

O

<

1706

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 28.

288 Vouchers

•

know anything about drugs in shifters so I just assumed it was some kind of long lasting thing.

“No way, it takes a heavy duty drug to affect a shifter and for him to still be affected someone is getting him doses of whatever it is regularly.” I instantly start making a list of names in my head as we

walk across the garden towards the cells, I’m shocked to see Selena already standing there, I assumed she would be with Rowan.

“Alpha Darryl, I thought I should be here so I can discuss what I’ve found out about the drug he’s on.” Darryl just raises an eyebrow at me, he’s clearly impressed, he follows Selena into the cell block as I link to Rowan and ask him to keep an eye on Eva. The last thing I want is for her to wake up panicked and alone while I’m dealing with Pack things.

89.82%

|||

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 196

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 29.

Eva

288 Vouchers

Waking up I'm really confused, the walls around me are metal and not the soft silk I fell asleep in, the floor is dirty and covered in tiny stones that are sticking into my bare skin. I've never been here before so I have no idea where I am. Feeling around on the floor I determine that the room I'm in is actually a very small metal box.

"Shitty isn't it?" I recognise the voice but I can't place it, I keep feeling around for a way out as it speaks to me. "It's time for you to see how it feels, to be made small, to be kept locked away, it's my time to be out there." A growl tells me that whoever is talking is a shifter so I stop moving and bring my knees to my chest, trying to make myself as small as possible.

"Who are you?" I can't stop the shake in my voice, not only am I scared I'm suddenly starting to feel really short of breath like someone is pushing down on my chest.

"Don't you know?" I hear heels clicking on the floor just out of my line of sight as the person walks in a circle around the small room I'm in. "I'm the person who was in this cage before you, trapped, alone and scared I would never escape. And then you opened the door, just enough for me to squeeze out and I'm not going back." The snarl as she speaks reminds me of a sound I've heard before but my mind isn't working and I can't think of who it is.

"Please, I've never seen this room before." I feel something furry brush against my back, spinning quickly, I try to see what it was but it's gone by the time I adjust my eyes in the dark. "Who are you?" I try to rack

0.00%

111

17.06

His Roque Omega Chapter 20.

288 Vouchers.

my brain, heels clacking, fur, snarling and growling, I list each thing. off in my brain like a song. It's on the third go around that I realise what I'm dealing with, "you're my wolf?"

"No, you're my human." A pure white muzzle pushes between the bars in the wall and the cold black nose pushes against my arm, "you stink of fear."

Pulling away from her nose I start to rock back and forth, I will myself to wake up because the only way I can be seeing my wolf this clearly is if I'm in a dream.

"This is a dream, just wake up." I keep repeating myself as the wolf walks around the cage, I can see her more clearly now, like someone is slowly turning the lights on.

“Not a dream, more like my nightmare, I’ve been here all along, locked down, chains around my n*eck and bars stopping my growth.” The wolf snaps her teeth at me and I jump before continuing my muttering, “I tried, Goddess knows I tried. Each time I spoke to you, you brushed me off, ignored my wisdom.” Her frustration is clear, as her tails starts to swish along the floor, “then to add insult to injury you bow to a human, a human. He almost had you killed, I could have fixed that too but again you kept me shut down.”

“I’m sorry,” I wail loudly as she starts to growl menacingly, it’s almost like she’s working herself up into a frenzy. “It wasn’t my fault, I had no idea you even existed. I thought I didn’t have a wolf, that you had left me after what they did.”

“You didn’t even try to find me,” she’s right and she knows it. Back with Fraction and Anna I thought about how good it would be to have a wolf but when I was banished I figured it was a good thing. So I’ ignored all signs of my wolf until she was pushed down so deep I

21.08%

17:06)

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 29.

288 iVouchers

forgot she was even there.

“You’re right, I messed up and now we are disconnected, I broke our bond. It’s all my fault.” Wiping at my face I look up to see the white wolf sitting on her haunches and looking at me with her head tilted to the side. “You can’t keep me locked in here, what I did was a mistake. I didn’t even know I was doing it but without me there is no you, you will be just as stuck in here as me.”

“I’ll let you out under a few conditions,” she starts to lick at her paws, she knows I’ll give her anything she wants to get out of this cage. Waking up doesn’t seem to be an option so I figure I need to actually give in if I don’t want to be trapped in my own mind. “I want freedom, regular running, training to protect ourselves.” I nod my head at her, both of those are kind of a given, “I also want you to reject our mate.” My eyes widen as she says this.

“My mate?” I shake my head, I don’t think I’ve met my mate but clearly this wolf thinks differently.

“Cas, he’s our mate. He’s known for a long time but he’s waited for you to come of age, I have no desire to be tied down to a Pack, I want to run free, hunt and lay in the sun.”

She turns her nose up to the ceiling like she's imagining the sun in her fur, she even closes her eyes as if enjoying the pleasure.

"I can't reject Cas, I mean I barely know the man and God only knows I don't love him but I can't reject him. I won't do that to him." The Shalamayne didn't often teach us much but they did tell us what happens if an Alpha's mate is killed, he becomes feral, aggressive and in some cases murderous. "I've lived in three places my whole life and this Pack house is the most free I have ever been, Cas has done nothing to harm me or control me. We are safe here."

"I can keep us safe/out there," I can hear the hesitation in her voice,

43.68%

III

17:06

<

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 29.

288 Vouchers

she's not sure she can keep us safe. She's untrained and all but a newborn thanks to how I kept her trapped all these years, it's my fault she is so bitter and angry.

"You can't and you know it, let me out and I'll get us the training to be able to be out there in the world alone." Pulling myself off the floor I grab a bar in each hand and press my face against the cold metal, "work with me and we can be a team."

I'm not sure what happens but one second I am pressing myself against the metal bars of a cage and the next I'm standing in the centre of the room in a pair of leggings and a white t-shirt.

"Ghost, my name is Ghost." Tentatively I take a step towards the wolf and when she doesn't move I keep walking until my hand is in her soft fur.

"I'm sorry I broke things, I didn't know what I was doing. It's not like I had anyone to show me how this is done." I bury my face into her snow white fur as I sob out my pain for the both of us, I don't think even I realise how badly I had hurt us. I cry until Ghost's fur turns wet under my cheek and my throat starts to ache from the heaving.

"I won't stay in a Pack for long, please don't make us." Pulling away from Ghost's fur I wipe at my face and nod my head.

“How about we stay for a bit? Ask for some tips on how to survive alone and then when we are ready and fully prepared we can leave.” I don’t know why but the thought of leaving Everfur suddenly fills me with a dread it didn’t just a week ago.

“It’s Cas, he’s working his way under your skin. If you give him even an inch the mating bond will take over and you will have no choice but to fall for him.” I have to admit that sounds awful, kind of like being around him too long would just take my choices away from me.

6785%

|||

<

17:06

His Rogue Omega Chapter 29.

288 Vouchers

“I’m sick of people making my decisions, telling me what to do.” Ghost nudges me with her nose, like she’s agreeing with me. “I’ll make sure we get out, no matter what I won’t let him worm his way in but I can’t reject him Ghost, you know as well as I do what happens when an Alpha loses his mate.”

“Like it will be better once you leave?” I don’t get a chance to ask her what she means as a massive bang sounds somewhere to the left of me. “Time to wake up kid,” Ghost wipes her tongue along the side of my face as I start to feel the silk sheets below me. “Maybe don’t ignore me now?” I don’t answer her as I blink my eyes and stare up at the pure white ceiling of Cas’s bedroom. Search the (website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

90.95%

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 197

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 30.

I cringe as the bed unfolds with a massive bang, it thuds off the floor vibrating across the room, my eyes shoot to Eva and see she's awake.

"Sorry Angel, I didn't think it would be so heavy." Eva rolls onto her side, bringing the cover with her, she watches me with sleepy eyes.

"What is it?" I chuckle as I let the piece drop that I'm holding, once it's laid flat you can clearly see it's a fold out camping bed. Not the greatest but the best I could do with overnight shipping.

"Sleeping in that chair is starting to hurt my back." I smile over at Eva as I make quick work of adding sheets, a comforter and pillow to the folded out bed. I already changed into my sleep pants after I said good night to Darryl, so I slide myself into the bed and lean on one of my hands so my elbow is supporting my weight.

"I can sleep on that bed if you want yours back," She's already pulling the covers back as I shake my head and reach up to flick off the bedside lamp.

"Sleep Angel, the first shift is always the worst and you will feel drained for days. I'll be here for the rest of the night," with the lamp off the room is plunged into darkness which is exactly how I like to sleep. Normally I sleep on my back but tonight I find myself on my side and watching the outline of Eva just slightly above me.

"Are you asleep?" Eva's small voice has my eyes opening after it feels like they just closed.

"Mmmm" the confirming sound is all I can manage as I try to pull myself from sleep.

0.00%

III

J Search the Find novel.net website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

1707 D

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 30.

288 Vouchers

"I dreamed of my wolf," he tone hasn't changed but suddenly I'm wide awake and staring at the darkness above me. It's rare for a shifter to have dreams of their wolves

and the only ones ever heard of doing it are Omegas. They have a special connection to their wolf that regular shifters don't have, it's unique to them and all can do it.

"What did she have to say?" From what I've learned on my travels, Omega's only dream of their wolf in times of high stress or danger.

"She told me you were my mate," the way she pauses makes me think she said more but I figure she will tell me if she wants to.

"She did? And how do you feel about that?" I want to jump for joy that she knows but I also know it won't mean the same to her as it does me. I was brought up knowing I would one day meet my mate and that she would be everything me and my wolf need or want. Eva grew up believing shifters are d*rt, dangerous and evil things, she won't have been told about mates or how they are connected.

"I don't know, I know Anna is Fraction's mate and I saw how they were together but otherwise I don't really have anything to go on." I nod my head in the dark, it's as I thought, she's as clueless as a new pup.

"I could have Selena come and talk to you about it if you like? I know when a shifter goes to school they split the males and females to do the mate talk. I'm not actually sure what they tell the females." I hear the rustling of covers and Eva sighing, looking over the bed I can see she's moved from her back onto her side.

"When you sent Selena to watch me did you tell her to be my friend?" I understand why she's asking the question, Selena is most likely the only friend she had and she thinks I paid for that friendship.

'Tell her the truth, don't take this from her.' I didn't need Storm to tell me that, I know how important it is for a female to have friends, her Omega side will start to crave companionship soon.

20 73%

|||

17.07 0

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 30.

288 Vouchers

"I didn't tell her to be your friend." I roll to my side and slide my hand under the pillow so I can support my head, I wish I could see Eva's face but I don't want to break the quiet mood we have going on. "When I first heard of a rogue in Midsey I sent Rowan to check it out, he found out it was a female working at the strip club by night and the diner by

day. He was confused as to why a shifter would be with a human so Selena suggested she take some shifts at the strip club to get to know the female." I chuckle a little as I remember Roman's reaction to that suggestion, "after a few colourful words from Rowan, she conceded to the Diner."

"So she was just meant to get to know me, to see if I was dangerous I presume?" I find it funny that she doesn't question us watching her just that Selena ended up being her friend, almost like she can't comprehend someone wanting to be her friend.

"It was after her first shift that I realised you were the female rogue, I smelled you on her, it almost knocked me off my feet. It took everything in me not to run to you." I close my eyes as I breathe in her scent, it so much better breathing it in now than off Selena's uniform.

"Why didn't you?" I can hear the tiredness in her voice, I'm enjoying the openness though, I don't want her to go back to sleep just yet.

"She was worried about you, she said you seemed scared of your own shadow and that you needed protecting. From that day Selena took it upon herself to go back to the Diner each morning, she wasn't your friend because I paid her. She was your friend because she thought you needed one." I hear her snuffle and find myself wondering if she's crying, I didn't mean to upset her. "Are you crying, Angel?"

"I've been so mean to her Cas, I thought she was just pretending but she actually is my friend. Do you think I can see her in the morning?" I lean up and reach my hand over to the bed, it takes me a second but I soon find her hand, I manage to squeeze it before she pulls away from

47.16%

|||

17:07

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 30.

288 iVouchers

me. "I'm tired."

"Go to sleep, Angel. I'll make sure Selena is here for breakfast," I hear her yawn as she rolls over and drags the covers up and over her.

"You always call me Angel." She mutters sleepily just before her soft snores tell me she's drifted off.

“That’s because the Goddess sent you just for me.” I whisper into the darkness, I lay there and listen to her drift into a deeper and deeper sleep.

‘Go up there and hold her’ I smile as I settle onto my back and pull my own covers up my chest.

‘Sure, should I just rut against her leg as well?’ Storm growls at me as I chuckle low in my chest.

‘If you think that’s how it’s done then maybe I should be in charge of the mating.’ I close my eyes as Storm continues to growl.

‘I know how to f uck,’ Storm has been with me each time I’ve had a female, I might have known my mate was out there somewhere but I didn’t live as a monk. I tried to bed a female after I met Eva but Storm got so aggressive I had to send her away, he wouldn’t allow it.

‘I didn’t say f uck, stupid human. Mating is more than f ucking and I don’t have time to educate you. This Omega of ours is going to run soon, I can smell it.’ I open my eyes and look over at Eva’s sleeping form, if she runs I know I will follow her, I’m too connected this time.

‘She won’t run.’ I try to sound sure but I can hear the worry in my own voice.

‘She will but we will chase her, to the end of the world if we have to.

74.55%

III

17:07

<

His Rogue Omega Chapter 30

288 Vouchers

Don’t

worry I have a good scent of her wolf.’ It doesn’t surprise me that Storm has been dancing around her wolf already.

'What's her name?' Being fated our wolves can connect without us being in our wolf forms so I know he's already met Eva's wolf.

'Ghost.' I smile as I feel sleep creeping up on me. I find it really interesting that a girl who has always lived in someone else's shadow has a Ghost for a wolf.

94.287%

[11]

<

Search the **Find novel.net** website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 198

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 31.

Eva ☆

"And the male slides his member into the warm wetness of the female, like so." I watch in horror as Selena makes the Barbie and Ken doll do things that these childrens toys are definitely not designed to do.

"Please stop." Honestly I would laugh if I wasn't so uncomfortable, she's supposed to be teaching me about fated mates not S*x.

"I thought you wanted to know about this stuff," she drops the dolls to the side and drops herself on the small cream sofa. "Cas said he wanted me to teach you about all of this." She waves her hand over the medical d ildo, condoms and multiple pamphlets on STD's.

"What exactly did he say?" I pick up one of the pamphlets and drop it again when I see it's talking about spots and oozing around the vagina. "I can't imagine he wanted you to talk to me about all of this, I'm not blooming with experience but I know what S*x is. I can't imagine shifters can get STD's anyway."

“He just said, ‘Eva needs to know about the birds and the bees’ and then he ran from the room like a twelve year old boy.” I have to give it Selena, if I didn’t know anything about S*x, I would now. “And shifters can get STD’s, most shifters are monogamous to their mate but for the odd one who sleeps around it can happen.”

“Alright,” I draw the word out as I turn away from all the gross looking pamphlets. “I just really want to know about mates, I never got taught. about them and my wolf keeps telling me Cas might be my mate.” I can feel myself going red as I admit to Selena that I have a connection to

|||

O

1288 (Vouchers

her Pack.

‘He is your mate, no might about it.’ I nod my head at Ghost as Selena gets this joyous look on her face.

“You and Cas, oh my Goddess. This is amazing!” I wish I could share in her joy but to me it just sounds like I’m being chained to yet another male, “having a mate is amazing. Once you are connected you can speak to him via a link only you two share but it’s more than that. There is this connection that is hard to explain, he will love you and only you forever, you will only ever need each other. If one of you needs something the other will give it, I don’t know how to explain it.” I put my hand in Selena’s as she starts to get really excited.

“Slow down.” I smile at her in what I hope is a reassuring way, “I just want to know what my options are. How badly would this hurt Cas if I was to reject the mating?”

“You can’t, please don’t.” Selena’s beautiful pale blue eyes go wide with worry, “not only is it bad to reject him because he’s an Alpha but also for cas specifically. The man has been rejected by every person who is supposed to love him unconditionally, he needs you and he’s waited a long time for you.” I can suddenly feel the guilt settle in my stomach like a led ball. “Please just think about it.”

“Can we get some food down here? I’m starving.” I look up at the ceiling, I can hear the people walking around above us and I don’t think I’m ready to go up there and meet them all.

“You can’t stay hidden down here forever, how about we grab some food and go and sit in the garden? Only the odd person comes out into the Pack garden anyway.” I like that idea so I nod my head and follow Selena as she starts up the stairs. It’s been a while

since I've sat outside. and just soaked up the sun, I don't think I've actually done it since I

III

O

Umega Chapter 31.

was at the Swiftmane Pack.

1288 Vouchers

As soon as I enter the lounge at the top of the Pack stairs, three sets of eyes turn to me, they linger on me for a second before they go back to what they were talking about.

"See, not as interesting as you thought." Selena smiles at me in a way I can't help but smile back at her, "come on, let's go see what Sally is making." Walking out of the lounge and along the hall to the kitchen we pass two males both eating sandwiches and running towards the front door, I barely get a good look at them before they are gone from sight.

"Who are they?" I ask Selena as we enter the kitchen.

"Oh don't mind them dear, just the warriors getting some food on the run. What can I do for you ladies?" Sally always seems to have a smile for me whenever I see her and today is no different. She has spots of flour on her face and her hazel eyes, while surrounded by age lines, are no less bright and cheery.

"I was going to take Eva to eat in the garden, any chance you can accommodate?" I sit down on one of the breakfast bar stools as Selena

does.

"Oh I'm sure I can rustle up something, how about some cheese and salad sandwiches with some fruit?" I nod my head at Sally as my stomach growls in agreement, "and that's my cue to rush." I chuckle a little as Sally starts to fly around the kitchen.

"Where are the other girls?" I ask while looking around the kitchen, the last time I was in here Sally had maybe five younger females helping her out.

"Three of them are at school and the other two didn't show up for their

O

Rogue Umega Chapter 31.

1288 Vouchers

shift, I'll have Cas chase them down later. The sooner that man gets a Beta the better for me." As Selena and Sally chat about the merits of having a Beta I watch the different people come and go from the kitchen. None of them say more than a mutter 'hello' and 'goodbye', none of them give me a second glance, if they wonder who I am then they don't outright say it.

"I've been worried about nothing." I don't realise I've spoken out loud until Selena puts her hand on mine.

"If only someone had told you that," I smile at Selena as Sally pushes two brown bags towards us.

"Enjoy ladies." We wave goodbye as we head out into the garden, I try to ignore the cell block but it's such an eye sore that you can't help but notice it.

"Why was that built there? It seems so out of place for such a lovely garden." I look around as Selena leads us to a small table and chair set up in the grass. There are a few picnic tables dotted around but nothing else to show this is a well used area.

"Honestly, I have no idea. I know Cas's father wanted it there but I wasn't part of the Pack when it was built." I bite into the sandwich Sally gave me and moan as the flavours hit my tongue.

"You're not from Everfur?" I don't know why but I just assumed Selena was an Everfur native.

"I actually grew up in Darryl's Pack, I met Rowan when he came to see his Grandmother and the rest as they say is history. I followed that man back here the very day I met him and I've never looked back." It's not hard to miss the happiness written on her face, she's practically beaming as she remembers meeting Rowan.

|||

00:34

1288 Vouchers

"And we miss her everyday." I turn around to see Cas, Rowan and Darryl all walking towards us, "nice to see you up and about Eva." I smile at Darryl as he sits down next to Selena, Rowan and Cas grab chairs from another table and bring them over to us.

"Nice to see you outside Angel, did you have a nice talk with Selena?" As if we planned it, me and Selena both throw a napkin at Cas and laugh at his fake shocked face.

"I take it the ladies have made up." Rowan leans in and drops a k*ss on Selena's cheek, I continue to eat my sandwich as the guys chat about John and how they can help him.

'Goddess this is suffocating.' Ghost complains loudly as Cas reaches under the table and squeezes my hand.

'I've never had this, it's kind of nice actually.' I tell her as I squeeze his hand and smile at him.

Search the FindNovel.net website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Search the (website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 199

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 32.

Eva*

288 Vouchers

The woman sitting in front of me is giving me serious strict parent vibes, her red cloak keeps slipping off her thin shoulders and her grey hair is tied back in a tight bun. The half moon glasses help her see what on the paper she's scribbling on while also being able to look at me over them.

"Now Eva, this is just the start of the investigation. You will be presented with the findings in due course." Elder Iris's voice is nasally and drawn out, the kind that makes you scrunch your nose up as it assaults your ears. I look over at Cas and he just gives me a small nod in reassurance. "Your last name please?"

"Smith, I go by Eva Smith." I try to speak clearly but I'm having a hard. time speaking confidently in front of this woman.

"That is not your given name though? And I understand you have gone by Zoe in the past?" I nod my head at her but she just keeps her dark brown eyes on me, clearly she wants actual words.

“No it’s not my given name, I’m not sure of my family name.” Elder Iris makes a grimace with her mouth as she shows her distaste at not knowing my family.

“And the name Zoe?” Cas clears his throat and sits up a little straighter.

“What does that have to do with this Elder Iris?” I’m glad Cas has stepped in, I’m not sure how to tell an Elder that I had to pretend to be

⏏

Ox

288 Vouchers

someone else to kidnap an Alpha’s daughter.

“Alpha Castiel, I will remind you that your presence here is not required. You are being allowed to sit in as a precautionary measure,” Elder Iris casts her eyes at me again.

“Should your pet rogue get out of hand.” I cast my eyes down in shame, she was there the day Sookie provoked me into shifting for the first time so naturally she thinks I have no control.

“Can you tell me which Pack you were banished from before becoming a rogue?” I look at Cas and he just looks back at me blank. Search the website on Google to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

“I don’t understand the question.” I’m not sure if she’s asking about Swiftmane or the Pack I was taken from as a child.

“I think I spoke quite clearly but let me rephrase, which Pack were you born into?” I start to pick at my hands nervously, my Pack of birth is a sore subject with me.

“I don’t know.” Elder Iris makes a weird gesture with her face before looking down and writing on the paper in front of her quickly.

“And the name of your recognised Alpha?” I shrug my shoulders as Elder Iris spears me with a hard stare. “Use your words Miss Smith.”

“I don’t know.” Again she starts scribbling on her paper, “I was kidnapped at a young age. I don’t know anything about my birth family or Pack, I’m sorry if that displeases you.” Cas reaches across to me and puts some pressure on my arm, it’s the universal gesture for ‘calm down’.

“Do you have any proof of this kidnapping? A missing persons report or a report to an Elder or local Alpha?” cas clears his throat as he lets go of my hand, he leans forward in the chair clearly agitated at being on the wrong side of his own desk.

17.71%

1280 Vouchers

“She doesn’t know where she came from so how can she know if these reports were made?” Elder Iris makes a look of disgust before writing on her paper and looking at Cas with an angry look..

“This is your last warning, another outburst and I will have you removed from this office. Right now I am just collecting the facts so I can report back to the Elders council.” Her tone leaves little room for argument but Cas just keeps staring at her like he wishes she would burst into flames.

“Now, tell me about this human you allowed to beat you.” I’m stunned into silence and I just look at my knees, I can’t believe she just asked me that as if it means nothing.

“I didn’t allow anything.” My voice is barely above a whisper as I feel the sweat start to collect on the back of my neck.

“I have a witness who claims you said, ‘I’m right where I’m supposed to be’. In reference to being with the human?” I look to my side and Cast shrugs clearly not knowing who this supposed witness is. I remember saying those words but they were to Cas when we were alone on a dark dirt road.

“I was confused, I thought I was where I was meant to be but I was wrong.” It’s difficult to admit but after just a few weeks with Cas I’ve come to realise it’s true, I might not feel like I belong here but I do. know I’m not supposed to be with Jeremy.

“And did you tell him about shifters? About what we are?” She’s quickly writing notes as she fires off her next question.

“No.” I speak clearly, knowing that it’s important they know I didn’t spill the one rule James gave me before leaving the bus station.

“Did he give any indication of knowing about shifters?” I shake my head no as Elder Iris goes silent and starts to scribble on her paper. She

1288 Vouchers.

must have filled at least three pages since we sat down and she hasn’t even asked me all that much.

“Alright, that’s all I need. Alpha Castiel, Miss Smith, the Elder’s will be in touch in due course. It’s best for everyone if you stay here in Everfur for now, running off could look bad.” She tucks the papers she’s been writing on into her brown briefcase and stands from the desk, “now if you can escort me to my car I will be on my way.”

“Rowan is just outside, he will take you up.” Elder Iris waits for a second but when it’s clear Cas is not going to stand up and see her out she just sighs and shuffles past us and out of the office without another word.

For a while Cas just sits in the chair next to me silent as he taps his chin, I squirm in my chair uncomfortable with the amount of time it’s been since either of us talked.

‘He’s thinking, give him time.’ I can feel Ghost pacing in the back of my mind, it’s odd to think I squashed her down for so long because now I can’t imagine not having her pacing around my head.

“That was odd right? All those questions and how she acted with me?” If I can’t ask Cas surely Ghost will know if it was normal or not, as I speak with Ghost I watch Cas get up from his chair and walk around. his desk. It takes him a minute to readjust his desk chair before he starts to type on his open laptop.

‘I don’t know but it can’t be good, Storm is anxious I can feel it.’ Ghost’s answer doesn’t exactly leave me feeling reassured.

“What does she mean by staying in Everfur and running off looking bad?” Cas stops typing and looks over at me with concerned eyes.

“I’m sorry what Angel?” I smile at Cas, he was clearly elsewhere when

288 Vouchers

I asked the question.

“Are you alright?” I can see the worry marking his face, whatever just happened clearly has him on edge.

“Not really, Jeremy knows about shifters, about you.” I lean back in my chair as the impact of his words reaches me.

“They think I told the one secret none of us should tell?” Cas nods his head, “how bad is this?”

“For most it’s a death sentence but you’re the fated mate to an Alpha so they can’t just kill you.” My head starts to whirl as he keeps speaking. “at most they find proof you told and they give you a slap on the wrist and we have to pay a heavy fine. At best they have no proof and this goes away.

“I didn’t tell him Cas, I swear it.” Cas smiles at me but it doesn’t reach his eyes, “and we aren’t mated, I assume as a rogue they will just have me killed?”

“If it comes to it I will mate you to save you but I want to try and fight this first. I don’t want to force you into a mating, I want you to mate me because you want it.” I just nod my head, I don’t know how to tell him that I can already feel Ghost packing her bags so we can run. I have no intention of tying myself to another male no matter how safe that male is making me feel.

O

Search on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 200

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 33.

*Cas

‘She’s going to run, how can she not after that sh it show.’ I punch the bridge of my nose as Storm tells me what I already know. Eva went into the bedroom about ten minutes ago but I’ve got the office door open in case she decides to bolt.

‘If she runs now the Elders will put out the order without

any further investigation. What do you suggest I do?’ I’m man enough to admit that I feel out of my depth, I know I should have all my ducks in a row as Alpha but honestly it feels like everything keeps piling on at the

moment.

‘At least the Elder is out of our fur for now. Maybe show Eva some fun outside of the Pack?’ Storm is right, all Eva has seen is the inside of the Pack house and the garden. I don’t even think she’s actively spoken to anyone who isn’t me, Selena or Rowan. She might not be as trapped as she was with Jeremy but I’m keeping her just as sheltered, she needs to see that being in a Pack isn’t all rules and boundaries.

“Cas? You down there?” Hearing Selena shout down from the top of the stairs I get up from my desk and walk into the small lounge area.

“What’s up?” I ask as I stick my head around the bannister, Selena is in a tight red dress that looks incredible against her tan skin.

“Me and Rowan are going to Roxie’s and thought you and Eva might like to come?” I raise an eyebrow at her, “well not to the back obviously but for some drinks, dancing and fun. She needs to let her

|||

288 Vouchers

hair down, Cas.”

“Are you in my head?” Selena just tilts her head to the side making her blonde hair tumble down her arm, “never mind, I assume you have

something for her to wear?”

“Of course, you won’t regret this I promise.” She starts to come down the stairs in some rather dangerous looking heels so I meet her halfway and help her down. “You get sorted and I’ll help Eva get ready.” I notice she has a garment bag over her arm that looks like it’s holding more than one outfit.

“It’s already eight, what time are you planning on leaving? I don’t want to be out all night.” I ask as I look at my watch once we reach the bottom of the stairs.

“Calm down grandpa, go get ready and we’ll meet you at the car.” I just shake my head as I lead her towards the bedroom door, I don’t bother knocking, instead I just open it and see a wide eyed Eva sitting on the bed drying her hair.

“Oh good, you already showered.” Selena pushes her way into the bedroom, “get sorted Cas, I have work to do.”

“What’s going on?” Eva asks as she puts the towel across her knee to hide her bare legs, from what I can tell she’s just in a t-shirt and panties, I guess we disturbed her while getting ready for bed.

“We are going out, Cas go shower. You stink of wolf and sweat.” I can’t seem to move as my eyes stay on Eva, I’m willing her to move the towel and give me a sneak peak but I know it won’t happen. “Earth to Cas?” I blink my eyes rapidly and head for the bathroom.

“Come on, you can come with me. All my good stuff is upstairs.” I don’t listen to see if Eva responds to Selena, I quickly close the bathroom door behind me. Leaning my back against the door I look

288 Vouchers

down at my hard c ock pressing against my jeans, just that one glance and I'm hard as a rock. I'm expecting there to be zipper marks along my shaft when I take my jeans off.

'Best clean the pipes before she grinds all over you on the dance floor.'" I bark out a laugh at Storm as I pull my shirt over my head and toe off my boots.

'I'll be impressed if she doesn't sit there staring at her hands all night.'" It's not a dig at Eva, it's just a statement of fact, she's shy and barely speaks. Sure she has been opening up more and more the last day or two but I think that has more to do with her wolf than her.

I make quick work of the shower, deciding to forgo the needed wa nk and just have the cold water calm my libido. I know I might regret that later but right now I want to be near Eva because I know she must be freaking out at Selena dressing her up. Once I'm washed and dried I step into the bedroom completely n*ked, no point in hiding when I know the room is empty.

"Well hello Alpha." I could slap myself for not smelling Sookie before she spoke, I know it's because my mind is filled with everything Eva.

"What are you doing here, Sookie?" She's laid across the bed in nothing but a red g-string, I can see the bones of her hips sticking out as she holds herself up on one hand. I don't have a problem being n*ked around Pack mates but this feels wrong so I quickly head to my drawers and pull on a pair of boxers.

"Well with Eva gone I thought me and you could talk about this mating thing again." She rolls onto her back and using her feet as leverage she lifts her hips off the bed doing a slow seductive attempt of f ucking the

air.

'Get her out of here before I kill her.' Storm is not happy about Sookie

His Rogue Omega: Chapter 33.

1288 Vouchers

rolling around n*ked in the same bed Eva sleeps in.

"Leave Sookie, I've told you multiple times now. Me and you will not be mates, we still have to talk about what you did to Eva the other day." I cross my arms over my bare chest so she can see I have zero interest in her, my coc k outline can be seen in my boxers as it's as flaccid as ever. SEARCH THE Find_ website on GøøGLE to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

“Oh but I just helped right? The Elders will see she’s dangerous and get her out of your hair, you don’t need her baby.” Having heard enough I walk over to the bed and grab her arm, for a second her eyes light up thinking I’m giving in but instead I just drag her from the bed.

“You ever come in here again without permission, you will spend some time in the cells.” I snarl as I open the bedroom door, my grip on her is tight and she whimpers against the pain. “Me and you will not be mates, not now, not ever. Have some self respect or leave this Pack.” I throw her out of the bedroom and close the door before she even lands on the floor. I ignore the sounds of her shouting as I finish getting dressed in some black jeans, a black t-shirt that fits nicely over my muscles and some clean boots.

After messing with my hair for a few minutes in the mirror I open the bedroom door to an empty lounge. Hopefully Sookie leaving means she has finally heard me, I don’t want to banish a female from the Pack and force her to be a rogue but I will if this continues. After checking the office door is locked I pocket my keys and head up the stairs, the lounge is empty but I can hear chatting coming from the hall.

“Please tell me you had something to do with Sookie crying and running around wearing nothing but a piece of string?” I completely ignore Selena as she wipes her eyes, it seems she found the whole thing so funny she’s crying with laughter. I barely give her a second look though as my eyes land on Eva, she’s wearing skin tight black

His Rogue Omega Chapter 33

1288 (Vouchers

jeans that seem to be glued to her b*dy. They show every curve she has as does the red top that seems to criss-cross at the front giving her chest a caged in look, while flowing I can still see she’s rocking one hell of a figure underneath.

“You ready?” Rowan asks me as he claps me on the back.

“Beautiful.” I whisper as Eva looks at me with her pale blue eyes that now have a smokey blackness to them. Her cheeks flame as I walk over to her and place a hand at the small of her back and lead her out of the front door.

“Oh this is going to be fun, come on babe.” I hear Selena say behind me, I’m about to ask Rowan who is driving when a cab pulls up in front of the Pack house. I don’t question it, I just open the door and let Eva slide in before me, once inside the cab I’m pressed fully against her. We are connected from our feet all the way up to our shoulders, it’s the most I’ve ever touched her and Storm is going crazy at the contact.

“You alright?” I ask her as Rowan gives the cabbie directions from up front, Eva just nods her head as Selena climbs in beside me and closes the door.

Search the website on Gøøgle to access chapters of novels early and in the highest quality.

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

If you find any errors (non-standard content, ads redirect, broken links, etc.), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.